Very imperfect set.

Locke prelims to both vols (except for
t.p. to vol i), pp 277-8 of vol i
vol ii should have pp xl pp 293-6 of vol

Front (port) wanting
12 charts of 14 are present (see Ring only no. I)
only 7 plates of 49

84572

A

VOYAGE

TOWARDS THE

SOUTH POLE,

AND

ROUND THE WORLD.

PERFORMED IN

His Majesty's Ships the RESOLUTION and ADVENTURE,
In the Years 1772, 1773, 1774, and 1775.

WRITTEN

By JAMES COOK, Commander of the RESOLUTION.

In which is included,

CAPTAIN FURNEAUX's NARRATIVE of his Proceedings in the ADVENTURE during the Separation of the Ships.

IN TWO VOLUMES.

Illustrated with MAPS and CHARTS, and a VARIETY of PORTRAITS of PERSONS and VIEWS of PLACES, drawn during the Voyage by Mr. HODGES, and engraved by the most eminent Masters.

VOL. I

THE SECOND EDITION.

LONDON:
Printed for W. STRAHAN; and T. CADELL in the Strand.
MDCCLXXVII.

WELLCOME
HISTORICAL
MEDICAL
LIBRARY

A

VOYAGE

TOWARDS THE

SOUTH POLE,

AND

ROUND THE WORLD.

BOOK I.

From our Departure from England, to leaving the Society Isles, the first Time.

CHAP. I.

Passage from Deptford to the Cape of Good Hope, with an Account of several Incidents that happened by the Way, and Transactions there.

I SAILED from Deptford, April 9th, 1772, but got no farther than Woolwich; where I was detained by easterly winds till the 22d, when the ship fell down to Long Reach, and the next day was joined by the Adventure. Here both ships received on board their powder, guns, gunner's stores, and marines. 1772. April.

1772. May. On the 10th of May we left Long Reach, with orders to touch at Plymouth; but in plying down the river, the Reſolution was found to be very crank, which made it neceſſary to put into Sheerneſs, in order to remove this evil, by making ſome alterations in her upper works. Theſe the officers of the yard were ordered to take in hand immediately; and Lord Sandwich and Sir Hugh Palliſer came down to ſee them executed in ſuch a manner as might effectually anſwer the purpoſe intended.

June. On the 22d of June the ſhip was again completed for ſea, when I ſailed from Sheerneſs; and on the 3d of July, joined the Adventure in Plymouth Sound. The evening before, we met, off the Sound, Lord Sandwich, in the Auguſta yacht (who was on his return from viſiting the ſeveral dock-yards) with the Glory frigate and Hazard ſloop. We ſaluted his Lordſhip with ſeventeen guns; and ſoon after he and Sir Hugh Palliſer gave us the laſt mark of the very great attention they had paid to this equipment, by coming on board, to ſatisfy themſelves that every thing was done to my wiſh, and that the ſhip was found to anſwer to my ſatisfaction.

At Plymouth I received my inſtructions, dated the 25th of June, directing me to take under my command the Adventure; to make the beſt of my way to the iſland of Madeira, there to take in a ſupply of wine, and then proceed to the Cape of Good Hope, where I was to refreſh the ſhip's companies, and to take on board ſuch proviſions and neceſſaries as I might ſtand in need of. After leaving the Cape of Good Hope, I was to proceed to the ſouthward, and endeavour to fall in with Cape Circumciſion, which was ſaid by Monſieur Bouvet to lie in the latitude of 54° South, and in about 11° 20′ Eaſt longitude from Greenwich. If I diſcovered

discovered this Cape, I was to satisfy myself whether it was a part of the continent, which had so much engaged the attention of geographers and former navigators, or a part of an island. If it proved to be the former, I was to employ myself diligently in exploring as great an extent of it as I could; and to make such notations thereon, and observations of every kind, as might be useful either to navigation or commerce, or tend to the promotion of natural knowledge. I was also directed to observe the genius, temper, disposition, and number, of the inhabitants, if there were any, and endeavour, by all proper means, to cultivate a friendship and alliance with them; making them presents of such things as they might value; inviting them to traffic, and shewing them every kind of civility and regard. I was to continue to employ myself on this service, and making discoveries either to the Eastward or Westward, as my situation might render most eligible; keeping in as high a latitude as I could, and prosecuting my discoveries as near to the South Pole as possible; so long as the condition of the ships, the health of their crews, and the state of their provisions, would admit of; taking care to reserve as much of the latter as would enable me to reach some known port, where I was to procure a sufficiency to bring me home to England. But if Cape Circumcision should prove to be part of an island only, or if I should not be able to find the said Cape, I was in the first case to make the necessary survey of the island, and then to stand on to the Southward, so long as I judged there was a likelihood of falling in with the continent; which I was also to do in the latter case; and then to proceed to the Eastward, in further search of the said continent, as well as to make discoveries of such islands as might be situated in that unexplored part of the Southern

1772. June.

1772. June. hemiſphere; keeping in high latitudes, and proſecuting my diſcoveries, as above mentioned, as near the pole as poſſible, until I had circumnavigated the globe; after which I was to proceed to the Cape of Good Hope, and from thence to Spithead.

In the proſecution of theſe diſcoveries, wherever the ſeaſon of the year rendered it unſafe for me to continue in high latitudes, I was to retire to ſome known place to the Northward, to refreſh my people, and refit the ſhips; and to return again to the Southward, as ſoon as the ſeaſon of the year would admit of it. In all unforeſeen caſes, I was authoriſed to proceed according to my own diſcretion; and in caſe the Reſolution ſhould be loſt or diſabled, I was to proſecute the voyage on board the Adventure.

I gave a copy of theſe inſtructions to Captain Furneaux, with an order directing him to carry them into execution; and, in caſe he was ſeparated from me, appointed the iſland of Madeira for the firſt place of rendezvous, Port Praya in the iſland of St. Jago for the ſecond, Cape of Good Hope for the third, and New Zealand for the fourth.

During our ſtay at Plymouth, Meſſieurs Wales and Bayley, the two aſtronomers, made obſervations on Drake's Iſland, in order to aſcertain the latitude, longitude, and true time for putting the time-pieces and watches in motion. The latitude was found to be 50° 21′ 30″ North; and the longitude 4° 20′ Weſt of Greenwich, which, in this voyage, is every where to be underſtood as the firſt meridian, and from which the longitude is reckoned Eaſt and Weſt to 180° each
July. way. On the 10th of July, the watches were ſet a-going in the preſence of the two aſtronomers, Captain Furneaux, the firſt

first lieutenants of the ships, and myself, and put on board. The two on board the Adventure were made by Mr. Arnold, and also one of those on board the Resolution; but the other was made by Mr. Kendal, upon the same principle, in every respect, as Mr. Harrison's time-piece. The commander, first lieutenant, and astronomer, on board each of the ships, kept, each of them, keys of the boxes which contained the watches, and were always to be present at the winding them up, and comparing the one with the other; or some other officer, if at any time through indisposition, or absence upon any other necessary duties, any of thm could not conveniently attend. The same day, according to the custom of the navy, the companies of both ships were paid two months wages in advance, and as a further encouragement for their going this extraordinary voyage, they were also paid the wages due to them to the 28th of the preceding May. This enabled them to provide necessaries for the voyage. 1772. July.

On the 13th, at six o'clock in the morning, I sailed from Plymouth Sound, with the Adventure in company; and on the evening of the 29th, anchored in Funchiale Road, in the island of Madeira. The next morning I saluted the garrison with eleven guns; which compliment was immediately returned. Soon after, I went on shore, accompanied by Captain Furneaux, the two Mr. Forsters, and Mr. Wales. At our landing, we were received by a gentleman from the Vice-Consul, Mr. Sills, who conducted us to the house of Mr. Loughnans, the most considerable English merchant in the place. This gentleman not only obtained leave for Mr. Forster to search the island for plants, but procured us every other thing we wanted, and insisted on our accommodating ourselves at his house during our stay. Monday 13. Wednes. 29.

The

1772. July. The town of Funchiale, which is the capital of the iſland, is ſituated about the middle of the South ſide, in the bottom of the bay of the ſame name, in latitude 32° 33′ 34″ North, longitude 17° 12$\frac{1}{8}$′ Weſt. The longitude was deduced from lunar obſervations made by Mr. Wales, and reduced to the town by Mr. Kendal's watch, which made the longitude 17° 10′ 14″ Weſt. During our ſtay here, the crews of both ſhips were ſupplied with freſh beef and onions; and a quantity of the latter was diſtributed amongſt them for a ſea ſtore.

Auguſt. Saturday 1. Having got on board a ſupply of water, wine, and other neceſſaries, we left Madeira on the firſt of Auguſt, and ſtood Tueſday 4. to the Southward, with a fine gale at N. E. On the 4th we paſſed *Palma*, one of the Canary iſles. It is of a height to be ſeen twelve or fourteen leagues, and lies in the lati- Wedneſ. 5. tude 28° 38′ North, longitude 17° 58′ Weſt. The next day we ſaw the iſle of Ferro, and paſſed it at the diſtance of fourteen leagues. I judged it to lie in the latitude of 27° 42′ North, and longitude 18° 9′ Weſt.

I now made three puncheons of beer, of the inſpiſſated juice of malt. The proportion I made uſe of was about ten of water to one of juice. Fifteen of the nineteen half barrels of the inſpiſſated juice which we had on board, were produced from wort that was hopped before inſpiſſated. The other four were made of beer that had been both hopped and fermented before inſpiſſated. This laſt requires no other preparation to make it fit for uſe, than to mix it with cold water, from one part in eight, to one part in twelve of water (or in ſuch other proportion as might be liked), then ſtop it down; and, in a few days it will be briſk, and drinkable. But the other ſort, after being mixed with water in the ſame manner, will require to be fermented with *yeaſt*, in the

the uſual way of making beer; at leaſt it was ſo thought. However, experience taught us that this will not always be neceſſary. For by the heat of the weather and the agitation of the ſhip, both ſorts were at this time in the higheſt ſtate of fermentation, and had hitherto evaded all our endeavours to ſtop it. If this juice could be kept from fermenting, it certainly would be a moſt valuable article at ſea. 1772. Auguſt.

On finding that our ſtock of water would not laſt us to the Cape of Good Hope, without putting the people to a ſcanty allowance, I reſolved to ſtop at St. Jago for a ſupply. On the 9th, at nine o'clock in the morning, we made the iſland of Bonaviſta, bearing S. W. The next day, we paſſed the iſle of Mayo on our right; and the ſame evening anchored in Port Praya, in the iſland of St. Jago, in eighteen fathom water. The Eaſt point of the bay bore Eaſt; the Weſt point S. W. $\frac{1}{2}$ S.; and the fort N. W. I immediately diſpatched an officer to aſk leave to water, and purchaſe refreſhments; which was granted. On the return of the officer I ſaluted the fort with eleven guns, on a promiſe of its being returned with an equal number. But by a miſtake, as they pretended, the ſalute was returned with only nine; for which the governor made an excuſe the next day. The 14th in the evening, having completed our water, and got on board a ſupply of refreſhments; ſuch as hogs, goats, fowls, and fruit; we put to ſea, and proceeded on our voyage. Sunday 9. Monday 10. Friday 14.

Port Praya is a ſmall bay, ſituated about the middle of the South ſide of the iſland of St. Jago, in the latitude of 14° 53′ 30″ North, longitude 23° 30′ Weſt. It may be known, eſpecially in coming from the Eaſt, by the ſouthernmoſt hill on the iſland; which is round, and peaked at top; and lies a little way inland, in the direction of Weſt from the port.

1772. August.

This mark is the more neceſſary, as there is a ſmall cove about a league to the Eaſtward, with a ſandy beach in the bottom of it, a valley and cocoa-nut trees behind, which ſtrangers may miſtake for Port Praya, as we ourſelves did. The two points which form the entrance of Port Praya bay, are rather low, and in the direction of W. S. W. and E. N. E. half a league from each other. Cloſe to the Weſt point are ſunken rocks, on which the ſea continually breaks. The bay lies in, N. W. near half a league; and the depth of water is from fourteen to four fathoms. Large ſhips ought not to anchor in leſs than eight, in which depth the South end of the Green Iſland (a ſmall iſland lying under the Weſt ſhore) will bear Weſt. You water at a well that is behind the beach at the head of the bay. The water is tolerable, but ſcarce; and bad getting off, on account of a great ſurf on the beach. The refreſhments to be got here, are bullocks, hogs, goats, ſheep, poultry, and fruits. The goats are of the Antelope kind, ſo extraordinarily lean, that hardly any thing can equal them; and the bullocks, hogs, and ſheep are not much better. Bullocks muſt be purchaſed with money; the price is twelve Spaniſh dollars a head, weighing between 250 and 300 pounds. Other articles may be got from the natives in exchange for old cloaths, &c. But the ſale of bullocks is confined to a company of merchants; to whom this privilege is granted, and who keep an agent reſiding upon the ſpot. The fort above mentioned ſeems wholly deſigned for the protection of the bay, and is well ſituated for that purpoſe; being built on an elevation, which riſes directly from the ſea on the right, at the head of the bay.

We

PORT PRAYA in the ISLAND S^T. JAGO,

one of the

CAPE DE VERDS.

Scale of one Mile.





Published Feb.^y 1.^st 1777 by Wm. Strahan in New Street Shoe Lane & Tho.^s Cadell in the Strand London.

N.^o X

We had no ſooner got clear of Port Praya, than we got a freſh gale at N. N. E.; which blew in ſqualls, attended with ſhowers of rain. But the next day the wind and ſhowers abated, and veered to the South. It was, however, variable and unſettled for ſeveral days, accompanied with dark gloomy weather, and ſhowers of rain. 1772. Auguſt.

On the 19th, in the afternoon, one of the carpenter's-mates fell over board, and was drowned. He was over the ſide, ſitting in one of the ſcuttles; from whence, it was ſuppoſed, he had fallen: for he was not ſeen till the very inſtant he ſunk under the ſhip's ſtern, when our endeavours to ſave him were too late. This loſs was ſenſibly felt during the voyage, as he was a ſober man and a good workman. About noon the next day, the rain poured down upon us not in drops, but in ſtreams. The wind, at the ſame time, was variable, and ſqually; which obliged the people to attend the decks, ſo that few in the ſhips eſcaped a good ſoaking. We, however, benefited by it, as it gave us an opportunity of filling all our empty water caſks. This heavy rain at laſt brought on a dead calm, which continued twenty-four hours, when it was ſucceeded by a breeze from S. W. Betwixt this point and South, it continued for ſeveral days; and blew, at times, in ſqualls, attended with rain and hot ſultry weather. The mercury in the thermometers at noon, kept generally from 79 to 82. Wedneſ. 19. Thurſday 20.

On the 27th, ſpake with Captain Furneaux, who informed us that one of his petty officers was dead. At this time *we* had not one ſick on board; although we had every thing of this kind to fear from the rain we had had, which is a great promoter of ſickneſs in hot climates. To prevent this, and agreeable to ſome hints I had from Sir Hugh Palliſer, Thurſday 27.

1772. August. and from Captain Campbell, I took every neceſſary precaution by airing and drying the ſhip with fires made betwixt decks, ſmoking, &c. and by obliging the people to air their bedding, waſh and dry their cloaths, whenever there was an opportunity. A neglect of theſe things cauſeth a diſagreeable ſmell below, affects the air, and ſeldom fails to bring on ſickneſs; but more eſpecially in hot and wet weather.

We now began to ſee ſome of thoſe birds which are ſaid never to fly far from land; that is, man of war, and tropic birds, gannets, &c. No land, however, that we knew of, could be nearer than eighty leagues.

Sunday 30. On the 30th, at noon, being in the latitude of 2° 35′ North, longitude 7° 30′ Weſt, and the wind having veered to the Eaſt of South, we tacked and ſtretched to the S. W. In the latitude of 0° 52′ North, longitude 9° 25′ Weſt, we had one calm day, which gave us an opportunity of trying the current in a boat. We found it ſet to the North, one third of a mile an hour. We had reaſon to expect this from the difference we frequently found between the obſerved latitude, and that given by the log: and Mr. Kendal's watch ſhewed us, that it ſet to the Eaſt alſo. This was fully confirmed by the lunar obſervations; when it appeared, that we were 3° 0′ more to the Eaſt than the common reckoning. At the time of trying the current, the mercury in the thermometer in the open air ſtood at 75½; and when immerged in the ſurface of the ſea, at 74; but when immerged eighty fathoms deep (where it remained fifteen minutes), when it came up, the mercury ſtood at 66. At the ſame time we founded, without finding bottom with a line of two hundred and fifty fathoms.

The

The calm was ſucceeded by a light breeze at S. W., which kept veering by little and little to the South, and at laſt to the Eaſtward of South, attended with clear ſerene weather. At length, on the 8th of September, we croſſed the line in the longitude of 8° Weſt; after which the ceremony of ducking, &c. generally practiſed on this occaſion, was not omitted. 1772. Auguſt. September. Tueſday 8.

The wind now veering more and more to the Eaſt, and blowing a gentle top-gallant gale, in eight days it carried us into the latitude of 9° 30′ South, longitude 18° Weſt. The weather was pleaſant; and we daily ſaw ſome of thoſe birds which are looked upon as ſigns of the vicinity of land; ſuch as boobies, man of war, tropic birds, and gannets. We ſuppoſed they came from the iſle of Saint Matthew, or Aſcenſion; which iſles we muſt have paſſed at no great diſtance.

On the 27th, in the latitude of 25° 29′, longitude 24° 54′, we diſcovered a ſail to the Weſt, ſtanding after us. She was a ſnow; and the colours ſhe ſhewed, either a Portugueſe or St. George's Enſign; the diſtance being too great to diſtinguiſh the one from the other; and I did not chooſe to wait to get nearer, or to ſpeak with her. Sunday 27.

The wind now began to be variable. It firſt veered to the North, where it remained two days with fair weather. Afterwards it came round by the Weſt to the South; where it remained two days longer, and after a few hours calm, ſprung up at S. W. But here it remained not long, before it veered to S. E., Eaſt, and to the North of Eaſt; blew freſh, and by ſqualls, with ſhowers of rain.

With theſe winds we advanced but ſlowly, and without meeting with any thing remarkable till the 11th of October, when October. Sunday 11.

1772. October. Sunday 11. when at $6^h\ 24^m\ 12^s$, by Mr. Kendal's watch, the moon roſe about four digits eclipſed; and ſoon after we prepared to obſerve the end of the eclipſe, as follows, viz.

	h.	m.	s.	
By me at - -	6	53	51	with a common refractor.
By Mr. Forſter -	6	55	23	
By Mr. Wales -	6	54	57	quadrant teleſcope.
By Mr. Pickerſgill	6	55	30	three feet refractor.
By Mr. Gilbert -	6	53	24	naked eye.
By Mr. Hervey -	6	55	34	quadrant teleſcope.
Mean - -	6	54	$46\frac{1}{2}$	by the watch.
Watch ſlow of apparent time	0	3	59	
Apparent time	6	58	$45\frac{1}{2}$	end of the eclipſe.
Ditto - -	7	25	0	at Greenwich.
Dif. of longitude	0	26	$14\frac{1}{2}$ =	- 6° 33′ 30″

The longitude obſerved by Mr. Wales was

By the ☽ and α Aquilæ	5°	51′	} Mean - -	6	13	0
By the ☽ and Aldebaran	6	35				
By Mr. Kendal's watch - - -				6°	$53'\frac{7}{8}$	

Monday 12. The next morning, having but little wind, we hoiſted a boat out, to try if there was any current; but found none.

Friday 16. From this time to the 16th, we had the wind between the North and Eaſt, a gentle gale. We had for ſome time ceaſed to ſee any of the birds before mentioned; and were now accompanied by albatroſſes, pintadoes, ſheerwaters, &c. and a ſmall grey peterel, leſs than a pigeon. It has a whitiſh belly, and grey back, with a black ſtroke acroſs from the tip of one wing to the tip of the other. Theſe birds ſometimes viſited us in great flights. They are, as well as the pintadoes, Southern birds; and are, I believe, never ſeen within the tropics, or North of the Line.

On

On the 17th, we ſaw a ſail to the N. W., ſtanding to the Eaſtward, which hoiſted Dutch colours. She kept us company for two days, but the third we out-ſailed her. 1772. October. Saturday 17.

On the 21ſt, at 7^h 30^m 20^s A. M. our longitude, by the mean of two obſerved diſtances of the ſun and moon, was 8° 4′ 30″ Eaſt; Mr. Kendal's watch at the ſame time gave 7° 22′. Our latitude was 35° 20′ South. The wind was now Eaſterly, and continued ſo till the 23d, when it veered to N. and N. W. after ſome hours calm; in which we put a boat in the water, and Mr. Forſter ſhot ſome albatroſſes and other birds, on which we feaſted the next day, and found them exceedingly good. At the ſame time we ſaw a ſeal, or, as ſome thought, a ſea lion; which probably might be an inhabitant of one of the iſlands of Triſtian de Cunha, being now nearly in their latitude, and about 5° Eaſt of them. Wedneſ. 21. Friday 23.

The wind continued but two days at N. W. and S. W.; then veered to the S. E., where it remained two days longer; then fixed at N. W., which carried us to our intended port. As we approached the land, the ſea-fowl, which had accompanied us hitherto, began to leave us; at leaſt they did not come in ſuch numbers. Nor did we ſee gannets, or the black-bird, commonly called the Cape Hen, till we were nearly within ſight of the Cape. Nor did we ſtrike ſoundings till Penguin iſland bore N. N. E. diſtant two or three leagues; where we had fifty fathom water. Not but that the ſoundings may extend farther off. However, I am very ſure that they do not extend very far Weſt from the Cape. For we could not find ground with a line of 210 fathoms, 25 leagues Weſt of Table Bay; the ſame at 35 leagues, and at 64 leagues. I ſounded theſe three times, in order to find a bank,

1772. October. a bank, which, I had been told, lies to the Weſt of the Cape; but how far I never could learn.

I was told, before I left England, by ſome gentlemen who were well enough acquainted with the navigation between England and the Cape of Good Hope, that I ſailed at an improper ſeaſon of the year; and that I ſhould meet with much calm weather, near and under the line. This probably may be the caſe ſome years. It is however not general. On the contrary, we hardly meet with any calms; but a briſk S. W. wind in thoſe very latitudes where the calms are expected. Nor did we meet with any of thoſe tornadoes, ſo much ſpoken of by other navigators. However, what they have ſaid of the current ſetting towards the coaſt of Guinea, as you approach that ſhore, is true. For, from the time of our leaving St. Jago, to our arrival into the latitude of $1^{\circ}\frac{1}{2}$ North, which was eleven days, we were carried by the current 3° of longitude more Eaſt than our reckoning. On the other hand, after we had croſſed the line, and got the S. E. Trade Wind, we always found by obſervation, that the ſhip outſtripped the reckoning, which we judged to be owing to a current ſetting between the South and Weſt. But, upon the whole, the currents in this run ſeemed to balance each other; for upon our arrival at the Cape, the difference of longitude by dead reckoning kept from England, without once being corrected, was only three quarters of a degree leſs than that by obſervation.

Thurſday 29. At two in the afternoon, on the 29th, we made the land of the Cape of Good Hope. The Table Mountain, which is over the Cape Town, bore E. S. E., diſtance 12 or 14 leagues. At this time it was a good deal obſcured by clouds, otherwiſe it might, from its height, have been ſeen at a much

greater diſtance. We now crowded all the ſail we could, thinking to get into the bay before dark. But when we found this could not be accompliſhed, we ſhortened ſail, and ſpent the night ſtanding off and on. Between eight and nine o'clock, the whole ſea, within the compaſs of our ſight, became at once, as it were, illuminated; or, what the ſeamen call, all on fire. This appearance of the ſea, in ſome degree, is very common; but the cauſe is not ſo generally known. Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander had ſatisfied me that it was occaſioned by ſea inſects. Mr. Forſter, however, ſeemed not to favour this opinion. I therefore had ſome buckets of water drawn up from along-ſide the ſhip, which we found full of an innumerable quantity of ſmall globular inſects, about the ſize of a common pin's head, and quite tranſparent. There was no doubt of their being living animals, when in their own proper element, though we could not perceive any life in them: Mr. Forſter, whoſe province it is more minutely to deſcribe things of this nature, was now well ſatisfied with the cauſe of the ſea's illumination. 1772. October. Thurſday 29.

At length day-light came and brought us fair weather; and having ſtood into Table Bay, with the Adventure in company, we anchored in five fathom water. We afterwards moored N. E. and S. W.; Green Point on the Weſt point of the bay, bearing N. W. by W.; and the church, in one with the valley between the Table Mountain and the Sugar-Loaf or Lion's Head, bearing S. W. by S. and diſtant from the landing place near the fort, one mile. Friday 30.

We had no ſooner anchored than we were viſited by the Captain of the port, or Maſter Attendant, ſome other officers belonging to the company, and Mr. Brandt. This laſt gentleman brought us off ſuch things as could not fail of being acceptable

1772. October. Friday 30. acceptable to perſons coming from ſea. The purport of the Maſter Attendant's viſit was, according to cuſtom, to take an account of the ſhips; to inquire into the health of the crews; and, in particular, if the ſmall-pox was on board; a thing they dread, above all others, at the Cape, and for theſe purpoſes a ſurgeon is always one of the viſitants.

My firſt ſtep after anchoring, was to ſend an officer to wait on Baron Plettenberg, the governor, to acquaint him with our arrival, and the reaſons which induced me to put in there. To this the officer received a very polite anſwer; and, upon his return, we ſaluted the garriſon with eleven guns, which compliment was returned. Soon after I went on ſhore myſelf, and waited upon the governor, accompanied by Captain Furneaux, and the two Mr. Forſters. He received us with great politeneſs, and promiſed me every aſſiſtance the place could afford. From him I learned that two French ſhips from the Mauritius, about eight months before, had diſcovered land, in the latitude of 48° South, and in the meridian of that iſland, along which they ſailed forty miles, till they came to a bay into which they were about to enter, when they were driven off and ſeparated in a hard gale of wind, after having loſt ſome of their boats and people, which they had ſent to ſound the bay. One of the ſhips, viz. the La Fortune, ſoon after arrived at the Mauritius, the Captain of which was ſent home to France with an account of the diſcovery. The Governor alſo informed me, that in March laſt, two other French ſhips from the iſland of Mauritius, touched at the Cape in their way to the South Pacific Ocean; where they were going to make diſcoveries, under the command of M. Marion. Aotourou, the man M. de Bougainville brought from Otaheite, was to have returned with M. Marion, had he been living.

After

After having viſited the governor and ſome other principal perſons of the place, we fixed ourſelves at Mr. Brandt's, the uſual reſidence of moſt officers belonging to Engliſh ſhips. This gentleman ſpares neither trouble nor expence to make his houſe agreeable to thoſe who favour him with their company, and to accommodate them with every thing they want. With him I concerted meaſures for ſupplying the ſhips with proviſions, and all other neceſſaries they wanted; which he ſet about procuring without delay, while the ſeamen on board were employed in overhauling the rigging; and the carpenters in caulking the ſhips ſides and decks, &c. 1772. October.

Meſſrs. Wales and Bayley got all their inſtruments on ſhore, in order to make aſtronomical obſervations for aſcertaining the going of the watches, and other purpoſes. The reſult of ſome of theſe obſervations ſhewed, that Mr. Kendal's watch had anſwered beyond all expectation, by pointing out the longitude of this place to within one minute of time to what it was obſerved by Meſſrs. Maſon and Dixon in 1761.

Three or four days after us, two Dutch Indiamen arrived here from Holland; after a paſſage of between four and five months, in which one loſt, by the ſcurvy and other putrid diſeaſes, 150 men; and the other 41. They ſent, on their arrival, great numbers to the hoſpital in very dreadful circumſtances. It is remarkable that one of theſe ſhips touched at Port Praya, and left it a month before we arrived there; and yet we got here three days before her. The Dutch at the Cape, having found their hoſpital too ſmall for the reception of their ſick, were going to build a new one at the eaſt part of the town; the foundation of which was laid with great ceremony while we were there.

1772. November. By the healthy condition of the crews of both ſhips at our arrival, I thought to have made my ſtay at the Cape very ſhort. But, as the bread we wanted was unbaked, and the ſpirit, which I found ſcarce, to be collected from different parts out of the country, it was the 18th of November before we had got every thing on board, and the 22d before we could put to ſea. During this ſtay the crews of both ſhips were ſerved every day with freſh beef or mutton, new baked bread, and as much greens as they could eat. The ſhips were caulked and painted; and, in every reſpect, put in as good a condition as when they left England. Some alterations in the officers took place in the Adventure. Mr. Shank the firſt lieutenant, having been in an ill ſtate of health ever ſince we ſailed from Plymouth, and not finding himſelf recover here, deſired my leave to quit, in order to return home for the re-eſtabliſhment of his health. As his requeſt appeared to be well-founded, I granted him leave accordingly, and appointed Mr. Kemp, firſt lieutenant in his room; and Mr. Burney, one of my midſhipmen, ſecond, in the room of Mr. Kemp.

Mr. Forſter, whoſe whole time was taken up in the purſuit of Natural Hiſtory and Botany, met with a Swediſh gentleman, one Mr. Sparrman, who underſtood ſomething of theſe ſciences, having ſtudied under Dr. Linnæus. He being willing to embark with us, Mr. Forſter ſtrongly importuned me to take him on board; thinking that he would be of great aſſiſtance to him in the courſe of the voyage. I at laſt conſented, and he embarked with us accordingly, as an aſſiſtant to Mr. Forſter; who bore his expences on board, and allowed him a yearly ſtipend beſides.

Mr.

Mr. Hodges employed himſelf here in drawing a view of the Cape, town, and parts adjacent, in oil colours; which was properly packed up, with ſome others, and left with Mr. Brandt, in order to be forwarded to the Admiralty by the firſt ſhip that ſhould ſail for England. 1772. November.

CHAP. II.

Departure from the Cape of Good Hope, in ſearch of a Southern Continent.

HAVING at length finiſhed my buſineſs at the Cape, and taken leave of the Governor and ſome others of the chief officers, who, with very obliging readineſs, had given me all the aſſiſtance I could deſire, on the 22d of November we repaired on board; and at three o'clock in the afternoon, weighed, and came to ſail with the wind at N. by W. As ſoon as the anchor was up, we ſaluted the fort with fifteen guns, which was immediately returned; and after making a few trips, got out of the bay by ſeven o'clock, at which time the town bore S. E. diſtant four miles. After this we ſtood to the Weſtward all night, in order to get clear of the land; having the wind at N. N. W. and N. W. blowing in ſqualls, attended with rain, which obliged us to reef our topſails. The ſea was again illuminated for ſome time, in the ſame manner as it was the night before we arrived in Table Bay. Sunday 22.

Having got clear of the land, I directed my courſe for Cape Circumciſion. The wind continued at N. W. a moderate gale, until the 24th; when it veered round to the Eaſtward. On the noon of this day, we were in the latitude Tueſday 24.

1772. November. Tueſday 24. of 35° 25′ South, and 29′ Weſt of the Cape; and had abundance of albatroſſes about us, ſeveral of which were caught with hook and line; and were very well reliſhed by many of the people, notwithſtanding they were at this time ſerved with freſh mutton. Judging that we ſhould ſoon come into cold weather, I ordered ſlops to be ſerved to ſuch as were in want; and gave to each man the fearnought jacket and trowſers allowed them by the Admiralty.

The wind continued eaſterly for two days, and blew a moderate gale, which brought us into the latitude of 39° 4′, and 2° of longitude Weſt of the Cape, thermometer 52½. Sunday 29. The wind now came to W. and S. W.; and on the 29th fixed at W. N. W. and increaſed to a ſtorm, which continued, with December. Sunday 6. ſome few intervals of moderate weather, till the 6th of December; when we were in the latitude of 48° 41′ South, and longitude 18° 24′ Eaſt. This gale, which was attended with rain and hail, blew at times with ſuch violence that we could carry no ſails; by which means we were driven far to the eaſtward of our intended courſe, and no hopes were left me of reaching Cape Circumciſion. But the greateſt misfortune that attended us, was the loſs of great part of our live-ſtock; which we had brought from the Cape, and which conſiſted of ſheep, hogs, and geeſe. Indeed this ſudden tranſition from warm mild weather, to extreme cold and wet, made every man in the ſhip feel its effects. For by this time the mercury in the thermometer had fallen to 38; whereas at the Cape it was generally at 67 and upwards. I now made ſome addition to the people's allowance of ſpirit, by giving them a dram whenever I thought it neceſſary, and ordered Captain Furneaux to do the ſame. The night proved clear and ſerene, and the only one that was ſo ſince we left

the Cape; and the next morning the riſing ſun gave us ſuch flattering hopes of a fine day, that we were induced to let all the reefs out of the top-ſails, and to get top-gallant yards acroſs, in order to make the moſt of a freſh gale at North. Our hopes, however, ſoon vaniſhed; for before eight o'clock, the ſerenity of the ſky was changed into a thick haze, accompanied with rain. The gale increaſing obliged us to hand the main-ſail, cloſe-reef our top-ſails, and to ſtrike top-gallant-yards. The barometer at this time was unuſually low, which foreboded an approaching ſtorm; and this happened accordingly. For, by one o'clock P. M. the wind, which was at N. W., blew with ſuch ſtrength as obliged us to take in all our ſails, to ſtrike top-gallant-maſts, and to get the ſpritſail-yard in. And I thought proper to wear, and lie to, under a mizzen-ſtay-ſail, with the ſhips heads to the N. E., as they would bow the ſea, which ran prodigiouſly high, better on this tack. 1772. December. Monday 7.

At eight o'clock next morning, being the 8th, we wore, and lay on the other tack; the gale was a little abated, but the ſea ran too high to make ſail, any more than the fore-top-maſt ſtay-ſail. In the evening, being in the latitude of 49° 40′ South, and 1°½ Eaſt of the Cape, we ſaw two penguins and ſome ſea or rock weed, which occaſioned us to ſound, without finding ground at 100 fathoms. At eight P. M. we wore, and lay with our heads to the N. E. till three o'clock in the morning of the 9th, then wore again to the Southward, the wind blowing in ſqualls attended with ſhowers of ſnow. At eight, being ſomething more moderate, I made the Adventure ſignal to make ſail, and ſoon after made ſail ourſelves under the courſes, and cloſe-reefed top-ſails. In the evening, took in the top-ſails and main-ſail, and brought to, under Tueſday 8. Wedneſ. 9.

1772. December. Wedneſ. 9. under foreſail and mizzen, thermometer at 36°. The wind, ſtill at N. W. blew a freſh gale, accompanied with a very high ſea. In the night had a pretty ſmart froſt with ſnow.

Thurſday 10. In the morning of the 10th we made ſail under courſes and topſails cloſe-reefed; and made the ſignal for the Adventure to make ſail and lead. At eight o'clock ſaw an iſland of ice to the weſtward of us, being then in the latitude of 50° 40′ South, and longitude 2° 0′ Eaſt of the Cape of Good Hope. Soon after, the wind moderated, and we let all the reefs out of the topſails, got the ſpritſail-yard out, and top-gallant-maſt up. The weather coming hazy, I called the Adventure by ſignal under my ſtern; which was no ſooner done, than the haze increaſed ſo much, with ſnow and ſleet, that we did not ſee an iſland of ice, which we were ſteering directly for, till we were leſs than a mile from it. I judged it to be about 50 feet high, and half a mile in circuit. It was flat at top, and its ſides roſe in a perpendicular direction, againſt which the ſea broke exceedingly high. Captain Furneaux at firſt took this ice for land, and hauled off from it, until called back by ſignal. As the weather was foggy, it was neceſſary to proceed with caution. We therefore reefed our topſails, and at the ſame time ſounded, but found no ground with 150 fathoms. We kept on to the Southward with the wind at North till night, which we ſpent in making ſhort trips, firſt one way and then another, under an eaſy ſail; thermometer theſe 24 hours from 36½ to 31.

Friday 11. At day-light in the morning of the 11th, we made ſail to the Southward with the wind at Weſt, having a freſh gale attended with ſleet and ſnow. At noon we were in the latitude of 51° 50′ South, and longitude 21° 3′ E., where we ſaw ſome white birds

birds about the ſize of pigeons, with blackiſh bills and feet. I never ſaw any ſuch before; and Mr. Forſter had no knowledge of them. I believe them to be of the peterel tribe, and natives of theſe icy ſeas. At this time we paſſed between two ice iſlands, which lay at a little diſtance from each other. 1772. December. Friday 11.

In the night the wind veered to N. W., which enabled us to ſteer S. W. On the 12th, we had ſtill thick hazy weather, with ſleet and ſnow; ſo that we were obliged to proceed with great caution on account of the ice iſlands. Six of theſe we paſſed this day; ſome of them near two miles in circuit, and 60 feet high. And yet, ſuch was the force and height of the waves, that the ſea broke quite over them. This exhibited a view which for a few moments was pleaſing to the eye; but when we reflected on the danger, the mind was filled with horror. For were a ſhip to get againſt the weather ſide of one of theſe iſlands when the ſea runs high, ſhe would be daſhed to pieces in a moment. Upon our getting among the ice iſlands, the albatroſſes left us; that is, we ſaw but one now and then. Nor did our other companions the pintadoes, ſheerwaters, ſmall grey birds, fulmars, &c. appear in ſuch numbers; on the other hand, penguins began to make their appearance. Two of theſe birds were ſeen to-day. Saturday 12.

The wind in the night veered to Weſt, and at laſt fixed at S. W. a freſh gale, with ſleet and ſnow, which froze on our ſails and rigging as it fell, ſo that they were all hung with icicles. We kept on to the Southward, paſſed no leſs than eighteen ice iſlands, and ſaw more penguins. At noon on the 13th, we were in the latitude of 54° South, which is the latitude of Cape Circumciſion, diſcovered by M. Bouvet in 1739; Sunday 13.

1772. December. Sunday 13. 1739; but we were ten degrees of longitude Eaſt of it; that is, near 118 leagues in this latitude. We ſtood on to the S. S. E. till eight o'clock in the evening, the weather ſtill continuing thick and hazy, with ſleet and ſnow. From noon till this time, twenty ice iſlands, of various extent both for height and circuit, preſented themſelves to our view. At eight o'clock we ſounded, but found no ground with 150 fathom of line.

We now tacked and made a trip to the Northward till midnight, when we ſtood again to the Southward; and at half Monday 14. an hour paſt ſix o'clock in the morning of the 14th, we were ſtopped by an immenſe field of low ice; to which we could ſee no end, either to the eaſt, weſt, or ſouth. In different parts of this field were iſlands or hills of ice, like thoſe we found floating in the ſea; and ſome on board thought they ſaw land alſo over the ice, bearing S. W. by S. I even thought ſo myſelf; but changed my opinion upon more narrowly examining theſe ice hills, and the various appearances they made when ſeen through the haze. For at this time it was both hazy and cloudy in the horizon; ſo that a diſtant object could not be ſeen diſtinct. Being now in the latitude of 54° 50′ South, and longitude 21° 34′ Eaſt, and having the wind at N. W., we bore away along the edge of the ice, ſteering S. S. E. and S. E. according to the direction of the North ſide of it, where we ſaw many whales, penguins, ſome white birds, pintadoes, &c.

At eight o'clock we brought to under a point of the ice, where we had ſmooth water: and I ſent on board for Captain Furneaux. After we had fixed on rendezvouſes in caſe of ſeparation, and ſome other matters for the better keeping company, he returned on board, and we made ſail again along

along the ice. Some pieces we took up along-ſide, which yielded freſh water. At noon we had a good obſervation, and found ourſelves in latitude 54° 55′ South. 1772. December.

We continued a S. E. courſe along the edge of the ice, till one o'clock, when we came to a point round which we hauled S. S. W., the ſea appearing to be clear of ice in that direction. But after running four leagues upon this courſe, with the ice on our ſtarboard ſide, we found ourſelves quite imbayed; the ice extending from N. N. E. round by the Weſt and South, to Eaſt, in one compact body. The weather was indifferently clear; and yet we could ſee no end to it. At five o'clock we hauled up Eaſt, wind at North, a gentle gale, in order to clear the ice. The extreme Eaſt point of it, at eight o'clock, bore E. by S. over which appeared a clear ſea. We however ſpent the night in making ſhort boards, under an eaſy ſail. Thermometer, theſe 24 hours, from 32 to 30.

Next day, the 15th, we had the wind at N. W. a ſmall gale, thick foggy weather, with much ſnow; thermometer from 32 to 27; ſo that our ſails and rigging were all hung with icicles. The fog was ſo thick, at times, that we could not ſee the length of the ſhip; and we had much difficulty to avoid the many iſlands of ice that ſurrounded us. About noon having but little wind, we hoiſted out a boat to try the current, which we found ſet S. E. near $\frac{3}{4}$ of a mile an hour. At the ſame time, a thermometer, which in the open air was at 32°, in the ſurface of the ſea was at 30°; and, after being immerged 100 fathoms deep for about 15 or 20 minutes, came up at 34°, which is only 2° above freezing. Our latitude at this time was 55° 8′. Tueſday 15.

1772. December. The thick fog continued till two o'clock in the afternoon of the next day, when it cleared away a little, and we made ſail to the ſouthward, wind ſtill at N. W. a gentle gale. We had not run long to the ſouthward before we fell in with the main field of ice extending from S. S. W. to E. We now bore away to Eaſt along the edge of it; but at night hauled off North, with the wind at W. N. W. a gentle gale, attended with ſnow.

Thurſday 17. At four in the morning on the 17th, ſtood again to the ſouth; but was again obliged to bear up on account of the ice, along the ſide of which we ſteered betwixt E. and S. S. W. hauling into every bay or opening, in hopes of finding a paſſage to the South. But we found every where the ice cloſed. We had a gentle gale at N. W. with ſhowers of ſnow. At noon we were, by obſervation, in the latitude of 55° 16′ South. In the evening the weather was clear and ſerene. In the courſe of this day we ſaw many whales, one ſeal, penguins, ſome of the white birds, another ſort of peterel, which is brown and white, and not much unlike a pintado; and ſome other ſorts already known. We found the ſkirts of the looſe ice to be more broken than uſual; and it extended ſome diſtance beyond the main field, inſomuch that we ſailed amongſt it the moſt part of the day; and the high ice iſlands without us were innumerable. At eight o'clock we ſounded, but found no ground with 250 fathoms of line. After this we hauled cloſe upon a wind to the northward, as we could ſee the field of ice extend as far as N. E. But this happened not to be the northern point; for at eleven o'clock we were obliged to tack to avoid it.

Friday 18. At two o'clock the next morning we ſtood again to the northward, with the wind at N. W. by W., thinking to weather

weather the ice upon this tack; on which we ſtood but two hours, before we found ourſelves quite imbayed, being then in latitude 55° 8′, longitude 24° 3′. The wind veering more to the North, we tacked and ſtood to the weſtward under all the ſail we could carry, having a freſh breeze and clear weather, which laſt was of ſhort duration. For at ſix o'clock it became hazy, and ſoon after there was thick fog; the wind veered to the N. E., freſhened, and brought with it ſnow and ſleet, which froze on the rigging as it fell. We were now enabled to get clear of the field of ice; but at the ſame time we were carried in amongſt the ice iſlands, in a manner equally dangerous, and which with much difficulty we kept clear of. 1772. December.

Dangerous as it is to ſail among theſe floating rocks (if I may be allowed to call them ſo) in a thick fog; this, however, is preferable to being entangled with immenſe fields of ice under the ſame circumſtances. The great danger to be apprehended in this latter caſe, is the getting faſt in the ice; a ſituation which would be exceedingly alarming. I had two men on board that had been in the Greenland trade; the one of them in a ſhip that lay nine weeks, and the other in one that lay ſix weeks, faſt in this kind of ice; which they called packed ice. What *they* call field ice is thicker; and the whole field, be it ever ſo large, conſiſts of one piece. Whereas this which I call field ice, from its immenſe extent, conſiſts of many pieces of various ſizes both in thickneſs and ſurface, from 30 or 40 feet ſquare, to 3 or 4; packed cloſe together; and in places heaped one upon another. This, I am of opinion, would be found too hard for a ſhip's ſide, that is not properly armed againſt it. How long it may have lain, or will lie here, is a point not eaſily

1772. December. determined. Such ice is found in the Greenland ſeas all the ſummer long; and I think it cannot be colder there in the ſummer, than it is here. Be this as it may, we certainly had no thaw; on the contrary, the mercury in Fahrenheit's thermometer kept generally below the freezing point, although it was the middle of ſummer.

It is a general opinion, that the ice I have been ſpeaking of, is formed in bays and rivers. Under this ſuppoſition we were led to believe that land was not far diſtant; and that it even lay to the ſouthward behind the ice, which alone hindered us from approaching to it. Therefore, as we had now ſailed above 30 leagues along the edge of the ice, without finding a paſſage to the South, I determined to run 30 or 40 leagues to the Eaſt, afterwards endeavour to get to the ſouthwards, and, if I met with no land, or other impediment, to get behind the ice, and put the matter out of all manner of diſpute. With this view, we kept ſtanding to the N. W., with the wind at N. E. and N., thick foggy weather, with ſleet and ſnow, till ſix in the evening, when the wind veered to N. W., and we tacked and ſtood to the eaſtward, meeting with many iſlands of ice of different magnitudes, and ſome looſe pieces: the thermometer from 30 to 34; weather very hazy, with ſleet and ſnow, and more ſenſibly colder than the thermometer ſeemed to point out, inſomuch that the whole crew complained. In order to enable them to ſupport this weather the better, I cauſed the ſleeves of their jackets (which were ſo ſhort as to expoſe their arms) to be lengthened with baize; and had a cap made for each man of the ſame ſtuff, together with canvas; which proved of great ſervice to them.

Some

Some of our people appearing to have ſymptoms of the ſcurvy, the ſurgeons began to give them freſh wort every day, made from the malt we had on board for that purpoſe. One man in particular was highly ſcorbutic; and yet he had been taking of the rob of lemon and orange for ſome time, without being benefited thereby. On the other hand, Captain Furneaux told me, that he had two men who, though far gone in this diſeaſe, were now in a manner entirely cured by it. 1772. December.

We continued ſtanding to the eaſtward till eight o'clock in the morning of the 21ſt; when, being in the latitude of 53° 50′, and longitude 29° 24′ Eaſt, we hauled to the South with the wind at Weſt, a freſh gale and hazy, with ſnow. In the evening the wind fell, and the weather cleared up, ſo as that we could ſee a few leagues round us; being in the latitude of 54° 43′ South, longitude 29° 30′ Eaſt. Monday 21ſt.

At ten o'clock, ſeeing many iſlands of ice a-head, and the weather coming on foggy, with ſnow, we wore and ſtood to the northward, till three in the morning, when we ſtood again to the South. At eight, the weather cleared up, and the wind came to W. S. W., with which we made all the ſail we could to the South; having never leſs than ten or twelve iſlands of ice in ſight. Tueſday 22d.

Next day we had the wind at S. W. and S. S. W., a gentle gale, with now and then ſhowers of ſnow and hail. In the morning, being in the latitude of 55° 20′ South, and longitude 31° 30′ Eaſt, we hoiſted out a boat to ſee if there was any current; but found none. Mr. Forſter, who went in the boat, ſhot ſome of the ſmall grey birds before mentioned, which were of the peterel tribe, and about the ſize of a ſmall Wedneſ. 23d.

pigeon.

1772. December. pigeon. Their back, and upper ſide of their wings, their feet and bills, are of a blue grey colour. Their bellies, and under ſide of their wings, are white, a little tinged with blue. The upper ſide of their quill feathers is a dark blue tinged with black. A ſtreak is formed by feathers nearly of this colour, along the upper parts of the wings, and croſſing the back a little above the tail. The end of the tail feathers is alſo of the ſame colour. Their bills are much broader than any I have ſeen of the ſame tribe; and their tongues are remarkably broad. Theſe blue peterels, as I ſhall call them, are ſeen nowhere but in the ſouthern hemiſphere, from about the latitude of 28°, and upwards. Thermometer at 33° in the open air, at 32 in the ſea at the ſurface, and at 34½ when drawn, and 6½ minutes in drawing up from 100 fathoms below it, where it had been 16 minutes.

Thurſday 24. On the 24th the wind blew from N. W. to N. E. a gentle gale, fair and cloudy. At noon we were by obſervation in the latitude of 56° 31′ South, and longitude 31° 19′ Eaſt, the thermometer at 35. And being near an iſland of ice, which was about 50 feet high, and 400 fathoms in circuit, I ſent the maſter in the jolly-boat to ſee if any water run from it. He ſoon returned with an account, that there was not one drop, or any other appearances of thaw. In the evening we ſailed through ſeveral floats, or fields of looſe ice, lying in the direction of S. E. and N. W.; at the ſame time we had continually ſeveral iſlands of the ſame compoſition in ſight.

Friday 25. On the 25th, the wind veering round from the N. E. by the Eaſt to South, it blew a gentle gale; with which we ſtood to the W. S. W., and at noon were in the latitude of 57° 50′ South, and longitude 29° 32′ Eaſt. The weather was fair

and cloudy; the air ſharp and cold, attended with a hard froſt. And, although this was the middle of ſummer with us, I much queſtion if the day was colder in any part of England. The wind continued at South, blew a freſh gale, fair and cloudy weather, till near noon the next day, when we had clear ſun-ſhine, and found ourſelves, by obſervation, in the latitude of 58° 31′ South, longitude 26° 57′ Eaſt. 1772. December. Saturday 26.

In the courſe of the laſt twenty-four hours we paſſed through ſeveral fields of broken looſe ice. They were in general narrow, but of a conſiderable length, in the direction of N. W. and S. E. The ice was ſo cloſe in one, that it would hardly admit the ſhip through it. The pieces were flat, from four to ſix or eight inches thick, and appeared of that ſort of ice which is generally formed in bays or rivers. Others again were different; the pieces forming various honey-combed branches, exactly like coral rocks, and exhibiting ſuch a variety of figures as can hardly be conceived.

We ſuppoſed this ice to have broke from the main field we had lately left; and which I was determined to get to the South of, or behind, if poſſible; in order to ſatisfy myſelf whether or no it joined to any land, as had been conjectured. With this view I kept on to the weſtward, with a gentle gale at South, and S. S. W. and ſoon after ſix o'clock in the evening, we ſaw ſome penguins, which occaſioned us to ſound; but we found no ground with 150 fathoms.

In the morning of the 27th, we ſaw more looſe ice, but not many iſlands; and thoſe we did ſee were but ſmall. The day being calm and pleaſant, and the ſea ſmooth, we hoiſted out a boat, from which Mr. Forſter ſhot a penguin Sunday 27.

and

1772. December. and ſome peterels. Theſe penguins differ not from thoſe ſeen in other parts of the world, except in ſome minute particulars diſtinguiſhable only by naturaliſts. Some of the peterels were of the blue ſort; but differed from thoſe before mentioned, in not having a broad bill; and the ends of their tail feathers were tipped with white inſtead of dark blue. But whether theſe were only the diſtinctions betwixt the male and female, was a matter diſputed by our naturaliſts. We were now in the latitude of 58° 19′ South, longitude 24° 39′ Eaſt, and took the opportunity of the calm to ſound; but found no ground with a line of 220 fathoms. The calm continued till ſix in the evening, when it was ſucceeded by a light breeze from the Eaſt, which afterwards increaſed to a freſh gale.

Monday 28. In the morning of the 28th I made the ſignal to the Adventure to ſpread four miles on my ſtarboard beam; and in this poſition we continued ſailing W. S. W. until four o'clock in the afternoon, when the hazy weather, attended with ſnow ſhowers, made it neceſſary for us to join. Soon after we reefed our topſails, being ſurrounded on all ſides with iſlands of ice. Tueſday 29. In the morning of the 29th we let them out again, and ſet top-gallant ſails; ſtill continuing our courſe to the weſtward; and meeting with ſeveral penguins. At noon we were, by obſervation, in the latitude of 59° 12′, longitude 19° 1′ Eaſt; which is 3° more to the Weſt than we were when we firſt fell in with the field ice; ſo that it is pretty clear that it joined to no land, as was conjectured.

Having come to a reſolution, to run as far Weſt as the meredian of Cape Circumciſion, provided we met with no impediment, as the diſtance was not more than 80 leagues, the wind favourable, and

and the ſea ſeemed to be pretty clear of ice, I ſent on board for Captain Furneaux, to make him acquainted therewith; and after dinner he returned to his ſhip. At one o'clock we ſteered for an iſland of ice, thinking, if there were any looſe ice round it, to take ſome on board, and convert it into freſh water. At four we brought to, cloſe under the lee of the iſland; where we did not find what we wanted, but ſaw upon it eighty-ſix penguins. This piece of ice was about half a mile in circuit, and one hundred feet high and upwards; for we lay for ſome minutes with every ſail becalmed under it. The ſide on which the penguins were, roſe ſloping from the ſea, ſo as to admit them to creep up it. 1772. December. Tueſday 29.

It is a received opinion, that penguins never go far from land, and that the ſight of them is a ſure indication of its vicinity. This opinion may hold good where there are no ice iſlands; but where ſuch are, theſe birds, as well as many others, which uſually keep near the ſhores, finding a rooſting place upon theſe iſlands, may be brought by them a great diſtance from any land. It will, however, be ſaid, that they muſt go on ſhore to breed; that probably the females were there; and that theſe are only the males which we ſaw. Be this as it may, I ſhall continue to take notice of theſe birds whenever we ſee them, and leave every one to judge for himſelf.

We continued our courſe to the weſtward, with a gentle gale at E. N. E.; the weather being ſometimes tolerably clear, and at other times thick and hazy, with ſnow. The thermometer for a few days paſt was from 31 to 36. At nine o'clock the next morning, being the 30th, we ſhot one of the white birds; upon which we lowered a boat into the Wedneſd. 30.

1772. December. Wedneſ. 30. water to take it up; and by that means killed a pengu in which weighed 11½ pounds. The white bird was of the peterel tribe; the bill, which is rather ſhort, is of a colour between black and dark blue; and their legs and feet are blue. I believe them to be the ſame ſort of birds that Bouvet mentions to have ſeen, when he was off Cape Circumciſion.

We continued our weſterly courſe till eight o'clock in the evening, when we ſteered N. W. the point on which I reckoned the above-mentioned Cape to bear. At midnight we fell in with looſe ice, which ſoon after obliged us to tack, and ſtretch to the ſouthward. At half an hour paſt two o'clock Thurſday 31. in the morning of the 31ſt, we ſtood for it again, thinking to take ſome on board; but this was found impracticable. For the wind, which had been at N. E., now veered to S. E., and increaſing to a freſh gale, brought with it ſuch a ſea as made it very dangerous for the ſhips to remain among the ice. The danger was yet farther increaſed, by diſcovering an immenſe field to the North, extending from N. E. by E. to S. W. by W. farther than the eye could reach. As we were not above two or three miles from this, and ſurrounded by looſe ice, there was no time to deliberate. We preſently wore; got our tacks on board; hauled to the South; and ſoon got clear; but not before we had received ſeveral hard knocks from the looſe pieces, which were of the largeſt ſort, and among which we ſaw a ſeal. In the afternoon the wind increaſed in ſuch a manner, as to oblige us to hand the top-ſails, and ſtrike top-gallant-yards. At eight o'clock we tacked and ſtood to the Eaſt till midnight; when, being in the latitude of 60° 21′ South, longitude 13° 32′ Eaſt, we ſtood again to the Weſt.

Next day, towards noon, the gale abated; ſo that we could carry cloſe-reefed top-ſails. But the weather continued thick and hazy, with ſleet and ſnow, which froze on the rigging as it fell, and ornamented the whole with icicles; the mercury in the thermometer being generally below the freezing point. This weather continued till near noon the next day; at which time we were in the latitude of 59° 12′ South; longitude 9° 45′ Eaſt; and here we ſaw ſome penguins. 1773. January. Friday 1. Saturday 2.

The wind had now veered to the Weſt, and was ſo moderate, that we could bear two reefs out of the top-ſails. In the afternoon, we were favoured with a ſight of the moon, whoſe face we had ſeen but once ſince we left the Cape of Good Hope. By this a judgment may be formed of the ſort of weather we had had ſince we left that place. We did not fail to ſeize the opportunity to make ſeveral obſervations of the ſun and moon. The longitude deduced from them was 9° 34′ 30″ Eaſt. Mr. Kendal's watch, at the ſame time, giving 10° 6′ Eaſt; and the latitude was 58° 53′ 30″ South.

This longitude is nearly the ſame that is aſſigned to Cape Circumciſion; and at the going down of the ſun we were about ninety-five leagues to the ſouth of the latitude it is ſaid to lie in. At this time the weather was ſo clear that we might have ſeen land at fourteen or fifteen leagues diſtance. It is therefore very probable, that what Bouvet took for land, was nothing but mountains of ice, ſurrounded by looſe or field ice. We ourſelves were undoubtedly deceived by the ice hills, the day we firſt fell in with the field ice. Nor was it an improbable conjecture, that that ice joined to land. The probability was however now greatly leſſened, if not entirely ſet aſide. For the ſpace between the northern edge of the ice, along which we ſailed, and our route to the weſt,

1773. January. when ſouth of it, no where exceeded 100 leagues; and in ſome places not 60. But a view of the chart will beſt explain this. The clear weather continued no longer than

Sunday 3. three o'clock the next morning; when it was ſucceeded by a thick fog, ſleet, and ſnow. The wind alſo veered to N. E., and blew a freſh gale, with which we ſtood to S. E. It increaſed in ſuch a manner, that before noon we were brought under cloſe-reefed top-ſails. The wind continued to veer to the north; at laſt fixed at N. W., and was attended with intervals of clear weather.

Monday 4. Our courſe was Eaſt, $\frac{3}{4}$ North, till noon the next day, when we were in the latitude of 59° 2′ South, and nearly under the ſame meridian as we were when we fell in with the laſt field of ice, five days before: ſo that had it remained in the ſame ſituation, we muſt now have been in the middle of it. Whereas we did not ſo much as ſee any. We cannot ſuppoſe that ſo large a float of ice as this was, could be deſtroyed in ſo ſhort a time. It therefore muſt have drifted to the northward; and this makes it probable that there is no land under this meridian, between the latitude of 55° and 59°, where we had ſuppoſed ſome to lie, as mentioned above.

As we were now only ſailing over a part of the ſea where we had been before, I directed the courſe E. S. E. in order to get more to the ſouth. We had the advantage of a freſh gale, and the diſadvantage of a thick fog; much ſnow and ſleet, which, as uſual, froze on our rigging as it fell; ſo that every rope was covered with the fineſt tranſparent ice I ever ſaw. This afforded an agreeable ſight enough to the eye, but conveyed to the mind an idea of coldneſs, much greater than it really was: for the weather was rather milder than it had been for ſome time paſt, and the ſea

leſs

leſs incumbered with ice. But the worſt was, the ice ſo clogged the rigging, ſails and blocks, as to make them exceedingly bad to handle. Our people, however, ſurmounted thoſe difficulties with a ſteady perſeverance, and withſtood this intenſe cold much better than I expected. 1773. January. Monday 4.

We continued to ſteer to the E. S. E., with a freſh gale at N. W., attended with ſnow and ſleet, till the 8th, when we were in the latitude of 61° 12′ South, longitude 31° 47′ Eaſt. In the afternoon we paſſed more ice iſlands than we had ſeen for ſeveral days. Indeed they were now ſo familiar to us, that they were often paſſed unnoticed; but more generally unſeen on account of the thick weather. At nine o'clock in the evening, we came to one, which had a quantity of looſe ice about it. As the wind was moderate, and the weather tolerably fair, we ſhortened ſail, and ſtood on and off, with a view of taking ſome on board on the return of light. But, at four o'clock in the morning, finding ourſelves to leeward of this ice, we bore down to an iſland to leeward of us; there being about it ſome looſe ice, part of which we ſaw break off. There we brought to; hoiſted out three boats; and, in about five or ſix hours, took up as much ice as yielded fifteen tons of good freſh water. The pieces we took up were hard, and ſolid as a rock; ſome of them were ſo large, that we were obliged to break them with pick-axes, before they could be taken into the boats. Friday 8. Saturday 9.

The ſalt water which adhered to the ice, was ſo trifling as not to be taſted, and, after it had lain on deck a ſhort time, entirely drained off; and the water which the ice yielded, was perfectly ſweet and well-taſted. Part of the ice we broke in pieces, and put into caſks; ſome we melted in

1773. January. Saturday 9. in the coppers, and filled up the caſks with the water; and ſome we kept on deck for preſent uſe. The melting and ſtowing away the ice is a little tedious, and takes up ſome time; otherwiſe this is the moſt expeditious way of watering I ever met with.

Having got on board this ſupply of water, and the Adventure about two-thirds as much (of which we ſtood in great need), as we had once broke the ice, I did not doubt of getting more whenever we were in want. I therefore, without heſitation, directed our courſe more to the South, with a gentle gale at N. W., attended, as uſual, with ſnow Monday 11. ſhowers. In the morning of the 11th, being then in the latitude of 62° 44′ South, longitude 37° Eaſt, the variation of Tueſday 12. the compaſs was 24° 10′ Weſt, and the following morning in the latitude of 64° 12′ South, longitude 38° 14′ Eaſt, by the mean of three compaſſes, it was no more than 23° 52′ Weſt. In this ſituation we ſaw ſome penguins; and being near an iſland of ice from which ſeveral pieces had broken, we hoiſted out two boats, and took on board as much as filled all our empty caſks; and the Adventure did the ſame. While this was doing, Mr. Forſter ſhot an albatroſs, whoſe plumage was of a colour between brown and dark grey, the head and upper ſide of the wings rather inclining to black, and it had white eye-brows. We began to ſee theſe birds about the time of our firſt falling in with the ice iſlands; and ſome had accompanied us ever ſince. Theſe, and the dark-brown ſort with a yellow bill, were the only albatroſſes that had not now forſaken us.

At four o'clock P. M. we hoiſted in the boats, and made ſail to the S. E., with a gentle breeze at S. by W., attended with ſhowers of ſnow.

On the 13th, at two o'clock A. M. it fell calm. Of this we took the opportunity to hoiſt out a boat, to try the current, which we found to ſet N. W. near one third of a mile an hour. At the time of trying the current, a Fahrenheit's thermometer was immerged in the ſea 100 fathoms below its ſurface, where it remained twenty minutes. When it came up, the mercury ſtood at 32; which is the freezing point. Some little time after, being expoſed to the ſurface of the ſea, it roſe to $33\frac{1}{2}$; and in the open air to 36. The calm continued till five o'clock in the evening, when it was ſucceeded by a light breeze from the South and S. E., with which we ſtood to the N. E. with all our ſails ſet. 1773. January. Wedneſ. 13.

Though the weather continued fair, the ſky, as uſual, was clouded. However, at nine o'clock the next morning, it was clear; and we were enabled to obſerve ſeveral diſtances between the ſun and moon. The mean reſult of which gave 39° 30′ 30″ Eaſt longitude. Mr. Kendal's watch, at the ſame time, gave 38° 27′ 45″, which is 1° 2′ 45″ Weſt of the obſervations: whereas, on the 3d inſtant, it was half a degree Eaſt of them. Thurſday 14.

In the evening I found the variation, by the mean of Azimuths taken with Gregory's compaſs, to be	28°	14′	0
By the mean of ſix Azimuths by one of Dr. Knight's	28	32	0
And by another of Dr. Knight's - -	28	34	0

Our latitude at this time was 63° 57′, longitude 39° 38$\frac{1}{2}$″ Eaſt.

The ſucceeding morning, the 15th, being then in latitude 63° 33′ South, the longitude was obſerved by the following perſons, viz. Friday 15.

Myſelf,

1773. January. Friday 15.	Myſelf being the mean of ſix diſtances of the ſun and moon - - - -	}	40°	1′	45″ E.
	Mr. Wales, ditto - - - -		39	29	45
	Ditto - - ditto - - - -		39	56	45
	Lieutenant Clerke, ditto - - -		39	38	0
	Mr. Gilbert, ditto - - - -		39	48	45
	Mr. Smith, ditto - - - -		39	18	15
	Mean - - - - -		39	42	12
	Mr. Kendal's watch made - - -		38	41	30

Which is nearly the ſame difference as the day before. But Mr. Wales and I took each of us ſix diſtances of the ſun and moon, with the teleſcopes fixed to our ſextants, which brought out the longitude nearly the ſame as the watch. The reſults were as follows:—By Mr. Wales 38° 35′ 30″, and by me 38° 36′ 45″.

It is impoſſible for me to ſay whether theſe or the former are the neareſt the truth; nor can I aſſign any probable reaſon for ſo great a diſagreement. We certainly can obſerve with greater accuracy through the teleſcope, than with the common ſight, when the ſhip is ſufficiently ſteady. The uſe of the teleſcope is found difficult at firſt; but a little practice will make it familiar. By the aſſiſtance of the watch, we ſhall be able to diſcover the greateſt error this method of obſerving the longitude at ſea is liable to; which, at the greateſt, does not exceed a degree and an half, and in general will be found to be much leſs. Such is the improvement navigation has received by the aſtronomers and mathematical inſtrument makers of this age; by the former, from the valuable tables they have communicated to the Public, under the direction of the Board of Longitude, and contained in the aſtronomical ephemeris; and by the latter, from the great accuracy they obſerve in making

making inſtruments, without which the tables would, in a great meaſure, loſe their effect. The preceding obſervations were made by four different ſextants, of different workmen. Mine was made by Mr. Bird; one of Mr. Wales's by Mr. Dollond; the other, and Mr. Clerke's, by Mr. Ramſden; as alſo Mr. Gilbert's and Smith's, who obſerved with the ſame inſtrument. 1773. January. Friday 15.

Five tolerably fine days had now ſucceeded one another. This, beſides giving us an opportunity to make the preceding obſervations, was very ſerviceable to us on many other accounts, and came at a very ſeaſonable time. For, having on board a good quantity of freſh water, or ice, which was the ſame thing, the people were enabled to waſh and dry their cloaths and linen; a care that can never be enough attended to in all long voyages. The winds, during this time, blew in gentle gales, and the weather was mild. Yet the mercury in the thermometer never roſe above 36; and was frequently as low as the freezing point.

In the afternoon, having but little wind, I brought to under an iſland of ice, and ſent a boat to take up ſome. In the evening the wind freſhened at Eaſt, and was attended with ſnow ſhowers and thick hazy weather, which continued great part of the 16th. As we met with little ice, I ſtood to the South, cloſe hauled; and at ſix o'clock in the evening, being in the latitude of 64° 56′ South, longitude 39° 35′ Eaſt, I found the variation by Gregory's compaſs to be 26° 41′ Weſt. At this time, the motion of the ſhip was ſo great, that I could by no means obſerve with any of Dr. Knight's compaſſes. Saturday 16.

As the wind remained invariably fixed at Eaſt, and E. by S., I continued to ſtand to the South; and on the 17th, be- Sunday 17.

1773. January. Sunday 17. tween eleven and twelve o'clock, we croſſed the Antartic Circle in the longitude of 39° 35′ Eaſt; for at noon we were by obſervation in the latitude of 66° 36′ 30″ South. The weather was now become tolerably clear, ſo that we could ſee ſeveral leagues round us; and yet we had only ſeen one iſland of ice ſince the morning. But about four P. M. as we we were ſteering to the South, we obſerved the whole ſea in a manner covered with ice, from the direction of S. E., round by the South to Weſt.

In this ſpace, thirty-eight ice iſlands, great and ſmall, were ſeen, beſides looſe ice in abundance, ſo that we were obliged to luff for one piece, and bear up for another, and, as we continued to advance to the South, it increaſed in ſuch a manner, that at ¾ paſt ſix o'clock, being then in the latitude of 67° 15′ South, we could proceed no farther; the ice being entirely cloſed to the South, in the whole extent from Eaſt to W. S. W., without the leaſt appearance of any opening. This immenſe field was compoſed of different kinds of ice; ſuch as high hills; looſe or broken pieces packed cloſe together, and what, I think, Greenlandmen call field-ice. A float of this kind of ice lay to the S. E. of us, of ſuch extent that I could ſee no end to it, from the maſt head. It was ſixteen or eighteen feet high at leaſt; and appeared of a pretty equal height and ſurface. Here we ſaw many whales playing about the ice; and, for two days before, had ſeen ſeveral flocks of the brown and white pintadoes, which we named Antarctic peterels, becauſe they ſeem to be natives of that region. They are, undoubtedly, of the peterel tribe; are, in every reſpect, ſhaped like the pintadoes, differing only from them in colour. The head and fore-part of the body of theſe, are brown; and the hind-part of the body, tail, and ends of the wings, are white. The white peterel alſo

appeared

appeared in greater numbers than before; ſome few dark grey albatroſſes; and our conſtant companion the blue peterel. But the common pintadoes had quite diſappeared, as well as many other ſorts, which are common in lower latitudes. 1773. January. Sunday 17.

CHAP. III.

Sequel of the Search for a Southern Continent, between the Meridian of the Cape of Good Hope and New Zealand; with an Account of the Separation of the two Ships, and the Arrival of the Reſolution in Duſky Bay.

AFTER meeting with this ice, I did not think it was at all prudent to perſevere in getting farther to the South; eſpecially as the ſummer was already half ſpent, and it would have taken up ſome time to have got round the ice, even ſuppoſing it to have been practicable; which, however, is doubtful. I therefore came to a reſolution to proceed directly in ſearch of the land lately diſcovered by the French. And, as the winds ſtill continued at E. by S., I was obliged to return to the North, over ſome part of the ſea I had already made myſelf acquainted with, and, for that reaſon, wiſhed to have avoided. But this was not to be done; as our courſe made good, was little better than North. In the night the wind increaſed to a ſtrong gale, attended with ſleet and ſnow, and obliged us to double-reef our top-ſails. About noon the next day, the gale abated; ſo that we could bear all our reefs out; but the wind ſtill remained in its old quarter. Monday 18. Tueſday 19.

In the evening, being in the latitude of 64° 12′ South, longitude 40° 15′ Eaſt, a bird called by us in my former

1773. January. Tueſday 19. voyage, Port Egmont Hen, (on account of the great plenty of them at Port Egmont in Falkland Iſles) came hovering ſeveral times over the ſhip, and then left us in the direction of N. E. They are a ſhort thick bird about the ſize of a large crow, of a dark brown or chocolate colour, with a whitiſh ſtreak under each wing in the ſhape of a half moon. I have been told that theſe birds are found in great plenty at the Fero Iſles, North of Scotland; and that they never go far from land. Certain it is, I never before ſaw them above forty leagues off; but I do not remember ever ſeeing fewer than two together; whereas here was but one, which, with the iſlands of ice, may have come a good way from land.

At nine o'clock, the wind veering to E. N. E., we tacked and ſtood to the S. S. E.; but, at four in the morning of the Wedneſ. 20. 20th, it returned back to its old point, and we reſumed our northerly courſe. One of the above birds was ſeen this morning; probably the ſame we ſaw the night before, as our ſituation was not much altered. As the day advanced, the gale increaſed, attended with thick hazy weather, ſleet and ſnow, and at laſt obliged us to cloſe-reef our top-ſails, and ſtrike top-gallant-yards. But in the evening, the wind abated ſo as to admit us to carry whole top-ſails and top-gallant-yards aloft. Hazy weather, with ſnow and ſleet, continued.

Thurſday 21. In the afternoon of the 21ſt; being in the latitude of 62° 24′ South, longitude 42° 19′ Eaſt, we ſaw a white albatroſs with black tipped wings, and a pintadoe bird. The wind was now at South and S. W. a freſh gale. With this we ſteered N. E. againſt a very high ſea, which did not indicate the vicinity of land in that quarter; and yet it was there

we

we were to expect it. The next day, we had intervals of fair weather; the wind was moderate, and we carried our ſtudding ſails. In the morning of the 23d, we were in latitude 60° 27′ South, longitude 45° 33′ Eaſt. Snow ſhowers continued, and the weather was ſo cold, that the water in our water veſſels on deck had been frozen for ſeveral preceding nights. 1773. January. Friday 22. Saturday 23.

Having clear weather at intervals, I ſpread the ſhips a-breaſt four miles from each other; in order the better to diſcover any thing that might lie in our way. We continued to ſail in this manner till ſix o'clock in the evening, when hazy weather, and ſnow ſhowers, made it neceſſary for us to join.

We kept our courſe to N. E., till eight o'clock in the morning of the 25th, when, the wind having veered round to N. E. by E., by the Weſt and North, we tacked, and ſtood to N. W. The wind was freſh; and yet we made but little way againſt a high northerly ſea. We now began to ſee ſome of that ſort of peterels ſo well known to ſailors by the name of ſheerwaters, latitude 58° 10′, longitude 50° 54′ Eaſt. In the afternoon, the wind veered to the Southward of Eaſt; and, at eight o'clock in the evening, it increaſed to a ſtorm, attended with thick hazy weather, ſleet and ſnow. Monday 25.

During night we went under our fore-ſail and main-top-ſail cloſe-reefed; at day-light the next morning, added to them the fore and mizzen top-ſails. At four o'clock it fell calm; but a prodigious high ſea from the N. E., and a complication of the worſt of weather, viz. ſnow, ſleet, and rain, continued, together with the calm, till nine o'clock in the evening. Then the weather cleared up, and we got a breeze Tueſday 26.

at

1773. January. Wedneſ. 27. at S. E. by S. With this we ſteered N. by E. till eight o'clock the next morning, being the 27th, when I ſpread the ſhips and ſteered N. N. E., all ſails ſet, having a freſh breeze at S. by W. and clear weather.

At noon, we were, by obſervation, in the latitude of 56° 28′ South; and, about three o'clock in the afternoon, the ſun and moon appearing at intervals, their diſtances were obſerved by the following perſons; and the longitude reſulting therefrom was

By Mr. Wales, (mean of two ſets) - -	50°	59′ Eaſt.
Lieutenant Clerke - - - - -	51	11
Mr. Gilbert - - - - - - -	50	14
Mr. Smith - - - - - - -	50	50
Mr. Kendal's watch - - - -	50	50

At ſix o'clock in the evening, being in latitude 56° 9′ S. I now made ſignal to the Adventure to come under my ſtern; Thurſday 28. and, at eight o'clock the next morning, ſent her to look out on my ſtarboard beam, having at this time a freſh gale at Weſt, and pretty clear weather. But this was not of long duration; for, at two in the afternoon, the ſky became cloudy and hazy; the wind increaſed to a freſh gale; blew in ſqualls attended with ſnow, ſleet, and drizzling rain. I now made ſignal to the Adventure to come under my ſtern, and took another reef in each top-ſail. At eight o'clock I hauled up the main-ſail, and run all night under the fore-ſail, and two top-ſails; our courſe being N. N. E. and N. E. by N. with a ſtrong gale at N. W.

Friday 29. The 29th at noon, we obſerved in latitude 52° 29′ South, the weather being fair and tolerably clear. But in the afternoon, it again became very thick and hazy with rain; and

and the gale increaſed in ſuch a manner as to oblige us to ſtrike top-gallant yards, cloſe reef and hand the top-ſails. We ſpent part of the night, which was very dark and ſtormy, in making a tack to the S. W.; and in the morning of the 30th, ſtood again to the N. E., wind at N. W. and North, a very freſh gale; which ſplit ſeveral of our ſmall ſails. This day no ice was ſeen; probably owing to the thick hazy weather. At eight o'clock in the evening we tacked and ſtood to the Weſtward, under our courſes; but as the ſea run high we made our courſe no better than S. S. W.

1773. January. Friday 29. Saturday 30.

At four o'clock the next morning, the gale had a little abated; and the wind had backed to W. by S. We again ſtood to the Northward, under courſes and double-reefed top-ſails, having a very high ſea from the N. N. W.; which gave us but little hopes of finding the land we were in ſearch of. At noon, we were in the latitude of 50° 50′ S., longitude 56° 48′ Eaſt; and preſently after we ſaw two iſlands of ice. One theſe we paſſed very near, and found that it was breaking, or falling to pieces, by the cracking noiſe it made; which was equal to the report of a four-pounder. There was a good deal of looſe ice about it; and had the weather been favourable, I ſhould have brought to, and taken ſome up. After paſſing this, we ſaw no more, till we returned again to the South.

Sunday 31.

Hazy gloomy weather continued, and the wind remained invariably fixed at N. W., ſo that we could make our courſe no better than N. E. by N.; and this courſe we held till four o'clock in the afternoon of the firſt of February. Being then in the latitude of 48° 30′, and longitude 58° 7′ Eaſt, nearly in the meridian of the iſland of Mauritius, and where we

February. Monday 1.

1773. February. Monday 1. were to expect to find the land ſaid to be diſcovered by the French, of which at this time we ſaw not the leaſt ſigns, we bore away Eaſt.

I now made the ſignal to the Adventure to keep at the diſtance of four miles on my ſtarboard beam. At half an hour paſt ſix, Captain Furneaux made the ſignal to ſpeak with me; and, upon his coming under my ſtern, he informed me that he had juſt ſeen a large float of ſea or rock weed, and about it ſeveral birds (divers). Theſe were, certainly, ſigns of the vicinity of land; but whether it lay to the Eaſt or Weſt, was not poſſible for us to know. My intention was to have got into this latitude four or five degrees of longitude to the Weſt of the meridian we were now in, and then to have carried on my reſearches to the Eaſt. But the W. and N. W. winds, we had had the five preceding days, prevented me from putting this in execution.

The continual high ſea we had lately had from the N. E., N., N. W., and Weſt, left me no reaſon to believe that land of any extent lay to the Weſt. We therefore continued to ſteer to the E., only lying to a few hours in the night, and Tueſday 2. in the morning reſumed our courſe again, four miles North and South from each other; the hazy weather not permitting us to ſpread farther. We paſſed two or three ſmall pieces of rock weed, and ſaw two or three birds known by the name of egg-birds; but ſaw no other ſigns of land. At noon we obſerved, in latitude 48° 36′ South, longitude 59° 35′ Eaſt. As we could only ſee a few miles farther to the South, and as it was not impoſſible that there might be land not far off in that direction, I gave orders to ſteer S. $\frac{1}{2}$ E.; and made the ſignal for the Adventure to follow, ſhe being

being, by this movement, thrown a-ſtern. The weather continuing hazy till half an hour paſt ſix o'clock in the evening, when it cleared up ſo as to enable us to ſee about five leagues round us. 1773. February. Tueſday 2.

Being now in the latitude of 49° 13′ South, without having the leaſt ſigns of land, I wore and ſtood again to the Eaſtward, and ſoon after ſpoke with Captain Furneaux. He told me that he thought the land was to the N. W. of us; as he had, at one time, obſerved the ſea to be ſmooth when the wind blew in that direction. Although this was not conformable to the remarks *we* had made on the ſea, I reſolved to clear up the point, if the wind would admit of my getting to the Weſt in any reaſonable time.

At eight o'clock in the morning of the 3d, being in the latitude of 48° 56′ South, longitude 60° 47′ Eaſt, and upwards of 3° to the Eaſt of the meridian of Mauritius, I began to deſpair of finding land to the Eaſt; and as the wind had now veered to the North, reſolved to ſearch for it to the Weſt. I accordingly tacked and ſtood to the Weſt with a freſh gale. This increaſed in ſuch a manner, that, before night, we were reduced to our two courſes; and, at laſt, obliged to lie to under the fore-ſails, having a prodigious high ſea from W. N. W., notwithſtanding the height of the gale was from N. by W. At three o'clock the next morning, the gale abating, we made ſail, and continued to ply to the Weſt till ten o'clock in the morning of the 6th. Wedneſ. 3. Thurſday 4. Saturday 6.

At this time, being in the latitude of 48° 6′ South, longitude 58° 22′ Eaſt, the wind ſeemingly fixed at W. N. W.; and ſeeing no ſigns of meeting with land, I gave over plying, and bore away Eaſt a little ſoutherly: being ſatisfied, that if there is any land hereabout, it can only be an iſle of

1773. February. Saturday 6. no great extent. And it was juſt as probable I might have found it to the Eaſt as Weſt.

While we were plying about here we took every opportunity to obſerve the variation of the compaſs, and found it to be from 27° 50′, to 30° 26′ Weſt. Probably the mean of the two extremes, viz. 29° 4′, is the neareſt the truth, as it nearly agrees with the variation obſerved on board the Adventure. In making theſe obſervations, we found that, when the ſun was on the ſtarboard ſide of the ſhip, the variation was the leaſt; and when on the larboard ſide, the greateſt. This was not the firſt time we had made this obſervation, without being able to account for it. At four o'clock in the morning of the 7th, I made the Adventure's ſignal to keep at the diſtance of four miles on my ſtarboard beam; and continued to ſteer E. S. E. This being a fine day, I had all our men's bedding and cloaths ſpread on deck to air; and the ſhip cleaned and ſmoked betwixt decks. At noon I ſteered a point more to the South, being then in the latitude of 48° 49′ South, longitude 61° 48′ Eaſt. At ſix o'clock in the evening, I called in the Adventure; and, at the ſame time, took ſeveral azimuths, which gave the variation 31° 28′ Weſt. Theſe obſervations could not be taken with the greateſt accuracy, on account of the rolling of the ſhip, occaſioned by a very high weſterly ſwell.

Sunday 7.

The preceding evening, three Port Egmont hens were ſeen; this morning another appeared. In the evening, and ſeveral times in the night, penguins were heard; and, at day-light, in the morning of the 8th, ſeveral of theſe were ſeen; and divers of two ſorts, ſeemingly ſuch as are uſually met with on the coaſt of England. This occaſioned us to ſound; but we found no ground with a line of 210 fathoms.

Monday 8.

Our

Our latitude now was 49° 53′ South, and longitude 63° 39′ East. This was at eight o'clock. By this time the wind had veered round by the N. E. to E., blew a briſk gale, and was attended with hazy weather, which ſoon after turned to a thick fog; and, at the ſame time, the wind ſhifted to N. E. 1773. February. Monday 8.

I continued to keep the wind on the larboard tack, and to fire a gun every hour till noon; when I made the ſignal to tack, and tacked accordingly. But, as neither this ſignal, nor any of the former, was anſwered by the Adventure, we had but too much reaſon to think that a ſeparation had taken place; though we were at a loſs to tell how it had been effected. I had directed Captain Furneaux, in caſe he was ſeparated from me, to cruize three days in the place where he laſt ſaw me. I therefore continued making ſhort boards, and firing half-hour guns, till the 9th in the afternoon, Tueſday 9. when, the weather having cleared up, we could ſee ſeveral leagues round us, and found that the Adventure was not within the limits of our horizon. At this time, we were about two or three leagues to the eaſtward of the ſituation we were in when we laſt ſaw her; and were ſtanding to the weſtward with a very ſtrong gale at N. N. W., accompanied with a great ſea from the ſame direction. This, together with an increaſe of wind, obliged us to lie to, till eight o'clock Wedneſ. 10. the next morning; during which time we ſaw nothing of the Adventure, notwithſtanding the weather was pretty clear, and we had kept firing guns, and burning falſe fires, all night. I therefore gave over looking for her, made ſail, and ſteered S. E. with a very freſh gale at W. by N., accompanied with a high ſea from the ſame direction.

1773. February. Wednef. 10. While we were beating about here, we frequently ſaw penguins and divers, which made us conjecture that land was not far off; but in what direction, it was not poſſible for us to tell. As we advanced to the South, we loſt the penguins, and moſt of the divers; and as uſual, met with abundance of albatroſſes, blue peterels, ſheer-waters, &c.

Thurſday 11. The 11th at noon, and in the latitude of 51° 15′ South, longitude 67° 20′ Eaſt, we again met with penguins; and ſaw an egg bird, which we alſo look upon to be a ſign of the vicinity of land. I continued to ſteer to the S. E., with a freſh gale in the N. W. quarter, attended with a long hollow ſwell, and frequent ſhowers of rain, hail, and ſnow.

Friday 12. The 12th in the morning, being in the latitude of 52° 32′ S. longitude 69° 47′ Eaſt, the variation was 31° 38′ Weſt. In the evening, in the latitude of 53° 7′ South, longitude 70° 50′

Saturday 13. Eaſt, it was 32° 33′: and, the next morning, in the latitude of 53° 37′ South, longitude 72° 10′, it was 33° 8′ Weſt. Thus far we had continually a great number of penguins about the ſhip, which ſeemed to be different from thoſe we had ſeen near the ice; being ſmaller, with rediſh bills and browniſh heads. The meeting with ſo many of theſe birds, gave us ſome hopes of finding land, and occaſioned various conjectures about its ſituation. The great weſterly ſwell, which ſtill continued, made it improbable that land of any conſiderable extent lay to the Weſt. Nor was it very probable that any lay to the North; as we were only about 160 leagues to the South of Taſman's Track in 1642; and I conjectured that Captain Furneaux would explore this place; which accordingly happened. In the evening we ſaw a Port Egmont hen, which flew away in the direction of N. E.

Sunday 14. by E.; and, the next morning, a ſeal was ſeen; but no penguins.

guins. In the evening, being in the latitude of 55° 49′ S., longitude 75° 52′ Eaſt, the variation was 34° 48′ Weſt; and, in the evening of the 15th, in latitude 57° 2′ South, longitude 79° 56′ Eaſt, it was 38° Weſt. Five ſeals were ſeen this day, and a few penguins; which occaſioned us to ſound, without finding any bottom, with a line of 150 fathoms. 1773. February. Monday 15.

At day-light in the morning of the 16th, we ſaw an iſland of ice to the northward; for which we ſteered, in order to take ſome on board; but the wind ſhifting to that direction, hindered us from putting this in execution. At this time we were in the latitude of 57° 8′ South, longitude 80° 59′ Eaſt, and had two iſlands of ice in ſight. This morning we ſaw one penguin, which appeared to be of the ſame ſort which we had formerly ſeen near the ice. But we had now been ſo often deceived by theſe birds, that we could no longer look upon them, nor indeed upon any other oceanic birds, which frequent high latitudes, as ſure ſigns of the vicinity of land. Tueſday 16.

The wind continued not long at North, but veered to E. by N. E., and blew a gentle gale, with which we ſtood to the ſouthward; having frequent ſhowers of ſleet and ſnow. But, in the night, we had fair weather, and a clear ſerene ſky; and, between midnight and three o'clock in the morning, lights were ſeen in the heavens, ſimilar to thoſe in the northern hemiſphere, known by the name of Aurora Borealis, or Northern Lights; but I never heard of the Aurora Auſtralis being ſeen before. The officer of the watch obſerved, that it ſometimes broke out in ſpiral rays, and in a circular form; then its light was very ſtrong, and its appearance beautiful. He could not perceive it had any particular direction; for it appeared, at various times, in different Wedneſ. 17.

1773. February. Wedneſ. 17.

ferent parts of the heavens, and diffuſed its light throughout the whole atmoſphere.

At nine in the morning, we bore down to an iſland of ice which we reached by noon. It was full half a mile in circuit, and two hundred feet high at leaſt; though very little looſe ice about it. But while we were conſidering whether or no we ſhould hoiſt out our boats to take ſome up, a great quantity broke from the iſland. Upon this we hoiſted out our boats and went to work to get ſome on board. The pieces of ice, both great and ſmall, which broke from the iſland, I obſerved, drifted faſt to the weſtward; that is, they left the iſland in that direction, and were, in a few hours, ſpread over a large ſpace of ſea. This, I have no doubt, was cauſed by a current ſetting in that direction. For the wind could have but little effect upon the ice; eſpecially as there was a large hollow ſwell from the Weſt. This circumſtance greatly retarded our taking up ice. We, however, made a ſhift to get on board about nine or ten tons before eight o'clock, when we hoiſted in the boats and made ſail to the Eaſt, inclining to the South, with a freſh gale at South; which, ſoon after, veered to S. S. W. and S. W., with fair but cloudy weather. This courſe brought us among many ice iſles; ſo that it was neceſſary to proceed with great caution. In the night the mercury in the thermometer fell two degrees below the freezing point; and the water in the ſcuttle caſks on deck was frozen. As I have not taken notice of the thermometer of late, I ſhall now obſerve that, as we advanced to the North, the mercury gradually roſe to 45, and fell again, as we advanced to the South, to what is above mentioned; nor did it riſe, in the middle of the day, to above 34 or 35.

In

In the morning of the 18th, being in the latitude of 57° 54′ South, longitude 83° 14′ East, the variation was 39° 33′ West. In the evening, in latitude 58° 2′ South, longitude 84° 35′ East, it was only 37° 8′ West; which induced me to believe it was decreasing. But in the evening of the 20th, in the latitude of 58° 47′ South, longitude 90° 56′ East, I took nine azimuths, with Dr. Knight's compass which gave the variation 40° 7′; and nine others, with Gregory's, which gave 40° 15′ West. 1773. February. Thursday 18. Saturday 20.

This day, at noon, being nearly in the latitude and longitude just mentioned, we thought we saw land to the S. W. The appearance was so strong that we doubted not it was there in reality, and tacked to work up to it accordingly; having a light breeze at South, and clear weather. We were, however, soon undeceived, by finding that it was only clouds; which, in the evening, entirely disappeared, and left us a clear horizon, so that we could see a considerable way round us; in which space nothing was to be seen but ice islands.

In the night, the Aurora Australis made a very brilliant and luminous appearance. It was seen first in the East, a little above the horizon; and, in a short time, spread over the whole heavens.

The 21st, in the morning, having little wind and a smooth sea, two favourable circumstances for taking up ice, I steered for the largest ice island before us, which we reached by noon. At this time, we were in the latitude of 59° S. longitude 92° 30′ East; having, about two hours before, seen three or four penguins. Finding here a good quantity of loose ice, I ordered two boats out, and sent them to take some on board. While this was doing, the island, which Sunday 21.

1773. February. Sunday 21. was not leſs than half a mile in circuit, and three or four hundred feet high above the ſurface of the ſea, turned nearly bottom up. Its height, by this circumſtance, was neither increaſed nor diminiſhed apparently. As ſoon as we had got on board as much ice as we could diſpoſe of, we hoiſted in the boats, and made ſail to the S. E., with a gentle breeze at N. by E., attended with ſhowers of ſnow, and dark gloomy weather. As this time, we had but few ice iſlands Monday 22. in ſight; but, the next day, ſeldom leſs than twenty or thirty were ſeen at once.

The wind gradually veered to the Eaſt; and, at laſt, fixing at E. by S., blew a freſh gale. With this we ſtood to the Tueſday 23. South, till eight o'clock in the evening of the 23d; at which time we were in the latitude of 61° 52′ South, longitude 95° 2′ Eaſt. We now tacked, and ſpent the night, which was exceedingly ſtormy, thick, and hazy, with ſleet and ſnow, in making ſhort boards. Surrounded on every ſide with danger, it was natural for us to wiſh for day-light. This, when it came, ſerved only to increaſe our apprehenſions, by exhibiting to our view, thoſe huge mountains of ice, which, in the night, we had paſſed without ſeeing.

Theſe unfavourable circumſtances, together with dark nights, at this advanced ſeaſon of the year, quite diſcouraged me from putting in execution a reſolution I had taken of croſſing the Antarctic Circle once more. Accordingly, Wedneſ. 24. at four o'clock in the morning, we ſtood to the North, with a very hard gale at E. S. E,. accompanied with ſnow and ſleet, and a very high ſea from the ſame point, which made great deſtruction among the ice iſlands. This circumſtance, far from being of any advantage to us, greatly increaſed the number of pieces we had to avoid. The large pieces

which

which break from the ice iſlands, are much more dangerous than the iſlands themſelves. The latter are ſo high out of water, that we can generally ſee them, unleſs the weather be very thick and dark, before we are very near them. Whereas the others cannot be ſeen, in the night, till they are under the ſhip's bows. Theſe dangers were, however, now become ſo familiar to us, that the apprehenſions they cauſed were never of long duration; and were, in ſome meaſure, compenſated both by the ſeaſonable ſupplies of freſh water theſe ice iſlands afforded us (without which we muſt have been greatly diſtreſſed), and alſo, by their very romantic appearance, greatly heightened by the foaming and daſhing of the waves into the curious holes and caverns which are formed in many of them; the whole exhibiting a view, which at once filled the mind with admiration and horror, and can only be deſcribed by the hand of an able painter. Towards the evening, the gale abated; and in the night we had two or three hours calm. This was ſucceeded by a light breeze at Weſt; with which we ſteered Eaſt, under all the ſail we could ſet, meeting with many ice iſlands.

1773. February. Wedneſ. 24.

This night we ſaw a Port Egmont hen; and next morning, being the 25th, another. We had lately ſeen but few birds; and thoſe were albatroſſes, ſheerwaters, and blue peterels. It is remarkable, that we did not ſee one of either the white, or Antarctic peterels, ſince we came laſt amongſt the ice. Notwithſtanding the wind kept at Weſt and N. W. all day, we had a very high ſea from the Eaſt; by which we concluded that no land could be near, in that direction. In the evening, being in the latitude 60° 51′, longitude 95° 41′ Eaſt, the variation was 43° 6′ Weſt; and the next morning, being

Thurſday 25.

Friday 26.

1773. February. Friday 26. ing the 26th, having advanced about a degree and a half more to the Eaſt, it was 41° 30′; both being determined by ſeveral azimuths.

We had fair weather all the afternoon; but the wind was unſettled, veering round by the North to the Eaſt. With this, we ſtood to the S. E. and E., till three o'clock in the afternoon; when, being in the latitude of 61° 21′ South, longitude 97° 7′, we tacked and ſtood to the northward and eaſtward as the wind kept veering to the South. This, in the evening, increaſed to a ſtrong gale, blew in ſqualls, attended with ſnow and ſleet, and thick hazy weather, which ſoon brought us under our cloſe-reefed top-ſails.

Saturday 27. Between eight in the morning of the 26th, and noon the next day, we fell in among ſeveral iſlands of ice; from whence ſuch vaſt quantities had broken as to cover the ſea all round us, and render ſailing rather dangerous. However, by noon, we were clear of it all. In the evening the wind abated, and veered to S. W.; but the weather did not Sunday 28. clear up till the next morning; when we were able to carry all our ſails, and met with but very few iſlands of ice to impede us. Probably the late gale had deſtroyed a great number of them. Such a very large hollow ſea had continued to accompany the wind as it veered from Eaſt to S. W., that I was certain no land of conſiderable extent could lie within 100 or 150 leagues of our ſituation between theſe two points.

The mean height of the thermometer at noon, for ſome days paſt, was at about 35; which is ſomething higher than it uſually was in the ſame latitude about a month or five weeks before, conſequently the air was ſomething warmer. While the weather was really *warm*, the gales were not only ſtronger,

ſtronger, but more frequent; with almoſt continual, miſty, dirty, wet weather. The very animals we had on board felt its effects. A ſow having in the morning farrowed nine pigs, every one of them was killed by the cold before four o'clock in the afternoon, notwithſtanding all the care we could take of them. From the ſame cauſe, myſelf as well as ſeveral of my people, had fingers and toes chilblained. Such is the ſummer weather we enjoyed. 1773. February. Sunday 28.

The wind continued unſettled, veering from the South to the Weſt, and blew a freſh gale till the evening. Then it fell little wind; and, ſoon after, a breeze ſprung up at North; which quickly veered to N. E. and N. E. by E., attended with a thick fog, ſnow, ſleet, and rain. With this wind and weather, we kept on to the S. E., till four o'clock in the afternoon of the next day, being the 1ſt of March, when it fell calm; which continued for near twenty-four hours. We were now in the latitude of 60° 36′ South, longitude 107° 54′; and had a prodigious high ſwell from the S. W.; and, at the ſame time, another from the South or S. S. E. The daſhing of the one wave againſt the other, made the ſhip both roll and pitch exceedingly; but, at length, the N. W. ſwell prevailed. The calm continued till noon the next day, when it was ſucceeded by a gentle breeze from S. E.; which afterwards increaſed and veered to S. W. With this we ſteered N. E. by E. and E. by N. under all the ſail we could ſet. March. Monday 1. Tueſday 2.

In the afternoon of the 3d, being in latitude 60° 13′, longitude 110° 18′, the variation was 39° 4′ Weſt. But the obſervations by which this was determined, were none of the beſt; being obliged to make uſe of ſuch as we could get, during the very few and ſhort intervals when the ſun ap- Wedneſ. 3.

1773. March. Wedneſ. 3. peared. A few penguins were ſeen this day, but not ſo many iſlands of ice as uſual. The weather was alſo milder; though very changeable; thermometer from 36 to 38. We continued to have a N. W. ſwell, although the wind was unſettled, veering to N. E. by the Weſt and North, attended with hazy fleet, and drizzling rain.

Thurſday 4. We proſecuted our courſe to the Eaſt, inclining to the South, till three o'clock in the afternoon of the 4th, when (being in the latitude of 60° 37′, longitude 113° 24′) the wind ſhifting at once to S. W. and S. W. by S., I gave orders to ſteer E. by N. ½ N. But in the night we ſteered E. ½ S., in order to have the wind, which was at S. S. W., more upon the beam; the better to enable us to ſtand back, in caſe we fell in with any danger in the dark. For we had not ſo much time to ſpare, to allow us to lie to.

Friday 5. In the morning of the 5th, we ſteered E. by N., under all the ſail we could ſet, paſſing one ice iſland and many ſmall pieces, and at nine o'clock the wind, which of late had not remained long upon any one point, ſhifted all at once to Eaſt, and blew a gentle gale. With this we ſtood to the North; at which time we were in the latitude of 60° 44′ South, and longitude 116° 50′ Eaſt. The latitude was determined by the meridian altitude of the ſun, which appeared, now and then, for a few minutes till three in the afternoon. Indeed the ſky was, in general, ſo cloudy, and the weather ſo thick and hazy, that we had very little benefit of ſun or moon; very ſeldom ſeeing the face of either the one or the other. And yet, even under theſe circumſtances, the weather, for ſome days paſt, could not be called very cold. It, however, had not the leaſt pretenſion to be called ſummer weather according to my ideas of ſummer

in

in the northern hemiſphere, as far as 60° of latitude; which is nearly as far North as I have been. 1773. March. Friday 5.

In the evening we had three iſlands of ice in ſight, all of them large; eſpecially one, which was larger than any we had yet ſeen. The ſide oppoſed to us ſeemed to be a mile in extent; if ſo, it could not be leſs than three in circuit. As we paſſed it in the night, a continual cracking was heard, occaſioned, no doubt, by pieces breaking from it. For, in the morning of the 6th, the ſea, for ſome diſtance round it, Saturday 6. was covered with large and ſmall pieces; and the iſland itſelf did not appear ſo large as it had done the evening before. It could not be leſs than 100 feet high; yet ſuch was the impetuous force and height of the waves which were broken againſt it, by meeting with ſuch a ſudden reſiſtance, that they roſe conſiderably higher. In the evening we were in the latitude of 59° 58′ South, longitude 118° 39′ Eaſt. The 7th, the wind was variable in the N. E. and S. E. quarters, at- Sunday 7. tended with ſnow and ſleet till the evening. Then the weather became fair, the ſky cleared up, and the night was remarkably pleaſant, as well as the morning of the next Monday 8. day; which for the brightneſs of the ſky, and ſerenity and mildneſs of the weather, gave place to none we had ſeen ſince we left the Cape of Good Hope. It was ſuch as is little known in this ſea; and, to make it ſtill more agreeable, we had not one iſland of ice in ſight. The mercury in the thermometer roſe to 40. Mr. Wales and the Maſter made ſome obſervations of the moon and ſtars, which ſatisfied us that, when our latitude was 59° 44′, our longitude was 121° 9′. At three o'clock in the afternoon, the calm was ſucceeded by a breeze at S. E. The ſky, at the ſame time, was ſuddenly obſcured, and ſeemed to preſage an approaching

ſtorm,

1773. March. Monday 8. ſtorm, which accordingly happened. For, in the evening, the wind ſhifted to South, blew in ſqualls, attended with ſleet and rain, and a prodigious high ſea. Having nothing to take care of but ourſelves, we kept two or three points from the wind, and run at a good rate to the E. N. E. under our two courſes, and cloſe-reefed top-ſails.

Wedneſ. 10. The gale continued till the evening of the 10th. Then it abated; the wind ſhifted to the weſtward; and we had fair weather, and but little wind, during the night, attended Thurſday 11. with a ſharp froſt. The next morning, being in the latitude of 57° 56′, longitude 130°, the wind ſhifted to N. E., and blew a freſh gale, with which we ſtood S. E., having frequent ſhowers of ſnow and ſleet, and a long hollow ſwell from S. S. E. and S. E. by S. This ſwell did not go down till two days after the wind which raiſed it had not only ceaſed to blow, but had ſhifted, and blown freſh at oppoſite points, good part of the time. Whoever attentively conſiders this, muſt conclude, that there can be no land to the South, but what muſt be at a great diſtance.

Notwithſtanding ſo little was to be expected in that quarter, we continued to ſtand to the South till three o'clock in Friday 12. the morning of the 12th, when we were ſtopped by a calm; being then in the latitude of 58° 56′ South, longitude 131° 26′ Eaſt. After a few hours calm, a breeze ſprung up at Weſt, with which we ſteered Eaſt. The S. S. E. ſwell having gone down, was ſucceeded by another from N. W. by W. The weather continued mild all this day, and the mercury roſe to 39½. In the evening it fell calm, and continued ſo Saturday 13. till three o'clock in the morning of the 13th, when we got the wind at Eaſt and S. E., a freſh breeze, attended with ſnow and ſleet. In the afternoon it became fair, and the wind

wind veered to South and S. S. W. In the evening, being then in the latitude of 58° 59′, longitude 134°, the weather was ſo clear in the horizon, that we could ſee many leagues round us. We had but little wind during the night, ſome ſhowers of ſnow, and a very ſharp froſt. As the day broke, the wind freſhened at S. E. and S. S. E.; and ſoon after, the ſky cleared up, and the weather became clear and ſerene; but the air continued cold, and the mercury in the thermometer roſe only one degree above the freezing point.

1773. March. Saturday 13. Sunday 14.

The clear weather gave Mr. Wales an opportunity to get ſome obſervations of the ſun and moon. Their reſults reduced to noon, when the latitude was 58° 22′ South, gave us 136° 22′ Eaſt longitude. Mr. Kendal's watch, at the ſame time, gave 134° 42′; and that of Mr. Arnold, the ſame. This was the firſt, and only time, they pointed out the ſame longitude, ſince we left England. The greateſt difference, however, between them, ſince we left the Cape, had not much exceeded two degrees.

The moderate, and I might almoſt ſay, pleaſant weather, we had, at times, for the laſt two or three days, made me wiſh I had been a few degrees of latitude farther South; and even tempted me to incline our courſe that way. But we ſoon had weather which convinced us that we were full far enough; and that the time was approaching, when theſe ſeas were not to be navigated without enduring intenſe cold; which, by the bye, we were pretty well uſed to. In the afternoon, the ſerenity of the ſky was preſently obſcured; the wind veered round by the S. W. to Weſt, and blew in hard ſqualls, attended with thick and heavy ſhowers of hail and ſnow, which continually covered our decks, ſails, and rigging, till five o'clock in the evening of the 15th.

1773. March. Monday 15. 15th. At this time, the wind abated and ſhifted to S. E.; the ſky cleared up; and the evening was ſo ſerene and clear, that we could ſee many leagues round us; the horizon being the only boundary to our ſight.

We were now in the latitude of 59° 17′ South, longitude 140° 12′ Eaſt, and had ſuch a large hollow ſwell from W. S. W., as aſſured us that we had left no land behind us in that direction. I was alſo well aſſured that no land lay to the South on this ſide 60° of latitude. We had a ſmart froſt during the night, which was curiouſly illuminated with the ſouthern lights.

Tueſday 16. At ten o'clock in the morning of the 16th (which was as ſoon as the ſun appeared), in the latitude of 58° 51′ South, our longitude was 143° 10′ Eaſt. This good weather was, as uſual, of ſhort duration. In the afternoon of this day, we had again thick ſnow ſhowers; but, at intervals, it was tolerably clear; and in the evening, being in the latitude of 58° 58′ South, longitude 144° 37′ Eaſt, I found the variation, by ſeveral azimuths, to be 31′ Eaſt.

I was not a little pleaſed with being able to determine, with ſo much preciſion, this point of the line, in which the compaſs has no variation. For I look upon half a degree as next to nothing; ſo that the interſection of the latitude and longitude juſt mentioned, may be reckoned the point, without any ſenſible error. At any rate, the line can only paſs a very ſmall matter Weſt of it.

I continued to ſteer to the Eaſt, inclining to the South, Wedneſ. 17. with a freſh gale at S. W., till five o'clock the next morning, when, being in the latitude of 59° 7′ S., longitude 146° 53′ Eaſt, I bore away N. E., and, at noon, North, having come to a reſolution to quit the high ſouthern latitudes, and to proceed

proceed to New Zealand, to look for the Adventure, and to refreſh my people. I had alſo ſome thoughts, and even a deſire, to viſit the Eaſt coaſt of Van Diemen's Land, in order to ſatisfy myſelf if it joined the coaſt of New South Wales. 1773. March. Wedneſ. 17.

In the night of the 17th, the wind ſhifted to N. W., and blew in ſqualls, attended with thick hazy weather and rain. This continued all the 18th, in the evening of which day, being in the latitude of 56° 15′ South, longitude 150°, the ſky cleared up, and we found the variation by ſeveral azimuths to be 13° 30′ Eaſt. Soon after, we hauled up, with the log, a piece of rock weed, which was in a ſtate of decay, and covered with barnacles. In the night the ſouthern lights were very bright. Thurſ. 18.

The next morning, we ſaw a ſeal; and towards noon, ſome penguins, and more rock weed, being at this time in the latitude of 55° 1′, longitude 152° 1′ Eaſt. In the latitude of 54° 4′, we alſo ſaw a Port Egmont hen, and ſome weed. Navigators have generally looked upon all theſe to be certain ſigns of the vicinity of land; I cannot, however, ſupport this opinion. At this time we knew of no land, nor is it even probable that there is any, nearer than New Holland or Van Diemen's Land, from which we were diſtant 260 leagues. We had, at the ſame time, ſeveral porpuſes playing about us; into one of which Mr. Cooper ſtruck a harpoon; but, as the ſhip was running ſeven knots, it broke its hold, after towing it ſome minutes, and before we could deaden the ſhip's way. Friday 19.

As the wind, which continued between the North and the Weſt, would not permit me to touch at Van Diemen's Land, I ſhaped my courſe to New Zealand; and, being under no apprehenſions of meeting with any danger, I was not back-

1773. March. ward in carrying ſail, as well by night as day, having the advantage of a very ſtrong gale, which was attended with hazy rainy weather, and a very large ſwell from the Weſt and W. S. W. We continued to meet with, now and then, a ſeal, Port Egmont hens, and ſea weed.

Monday 22. On the morning of the 22d, the wind ſhifted to South, and brought with it fair weather. At noon, we found ourſelves in the latitude of 49° 55′, longitude 159° 28′, having a very large ſwell out of the S. W. For the three days paſt the mercury in the thermometer had riſen to 46, and the weather was quite mild. Seven or eight degrees of latitude had made a ſurpriſing difference in the temperature of the air, which we felt with an agreeable ſatisfaction.

We continued to advance to the N. E. at a good rate, having a briſk gale between the South and Eaſt; meeting with ſeals, Port Egmont hens, egg birds, ſea weed, &c. and having conſtantly a very large ſwell from the S. W. At ten
Thurſday 25. o'clock in the morning of the 25th, the land of New Zealand was ſeen from the maſt head; and, at noon, from the deck; extending from N. E. by E. to Eaſt, diſtant ten leagues. As I intended to put into Duſky Bay, or any other port I could find, on the ſouthern part of TAVAI POENAMMOO, we ſteered in for the land, under all the ſail we could carry, having the advantage of a freſh gale at Weſt, and tolerably clear weather. This laſt was not of long duration; for, at half an hour after four o'clock, the land, which was not above four miles diſtant, was in a manner wholly obſcured in a thick haze. At this time, we were before the entrance of a bay, which I had miſtaken for Duſky Bay, being deceived by ſome iſlands that lay in the mouth of it.

Fearing to run, in thick weather, into a place to which we were all ſtrangers, and ſeeing ſome breakers and broken ground a-head, I tacked in twenty-five fathom water, and ſtood out to ſea with the wind at N. W. This bay lies on the S. E. ſide of Cape Weſt, and may be known by a white cliff on one of the iſles which lies in the entrance of the bay. This part of the coaſt I did not ſee, but at a great diſtance, in my former voyage; and we now ſaw it under ſo many diſadvantageous circumſtances, that the leſs I ſay about it, the fewer miſtakes I ſhall make. We ſtood out to ſea, under cloſe-reefed top-ſails and courſes, till eleven o'clock at night; when we wore and ſtood to the northward, having a very high and irregular ſea. At five o'clock next morning, the gale abated, and we bore up for the land; at eight o'clock, the Weſt Cape bore E. by N. ½ N., for which we ſteered, and entered Duſky Bay about noon. In the entrance of it, we found 44 fathoms water, a ſandy bottom, the Weſt Cape bearing S. S. E., and Five Fingers Point, or the North point of the bay, North. Here we had a great ſwell rolling in from the S. W. The depth of water decreaſed to 40 fathoms; afterwards we had no ground with 60. We were, however, too far advanced to return; and therefore ſtood on, not doubting but that we ſhould find anchorage. For in this bay we were all ſtrangers; in my former voyage, having done no more than diſcover, and name it.

1773. March. Thurſday 25.

Friday 26.

After running about two leagues up the bay, and paſſing ſeveral of the iſles which lay in it, I brought to, and hoiſted out two boats; one of which I ſent away with an officer round a point on the larboard hand, to look for anchorage. This he found, and ſignified the ſame by ſignal. We then followed with the ſhip, and anchored in 50 fathoms water,

1773. March. Friday 26.

ſo near the ſhore as to reach it with an hawſer. This was on Friday the 26th of March, at three in the afternoon, after having been 117 days at ſea; in which time we had ſailed 3660 leagues, without having once ſight of land.

After ſuch a long continuance at ſea, in a high ſouthern latitude, it is but reaſonable to think that many of my people muſt be ill of the ſcurvy. The contrary, however, happened. Mention hath already been made of ſweet wort being given to ſuch as were ſcorbutic. This had ſo far the deſired effect, that we had only one man on board that could be called very ill of this diſeaſe; occaſioned, chiefly, by a bad habit of body, and a complication of other diſorders. We did not attribute the general good ſtate of health in the crew, wholly to the ſweet wort, but to the frequent airing and ſweetening the ſhip by fires, &c. We muſt alſo allow portable broth, and ſour krout, to have had ſome ſhare in it. This laſt can never be enough recommended.

My firſt care, after the ſhip was moored, was to ſend a boat and people a fiſhing; in the mean time, ſome of the gentlemen killed a ſeal (out of many that were upon a rock), which made us a freſh meal.

CHAP.

CHAP. IV.

Tranſactions in Duſky Bay, with an Account of ſeveral Interviews with the Inhabitants.

AS I did not like the place we had anchored in, I ſent Lieutenant Pickerſgill over to the S. E. ſide of the bay, to ſearch for a better; and I went myſelf to the other ſide, for the ſame purpoſe, where I met with an exceedingly ſnug harbour, but nothing elſe worthy of notice. Mr. Pickerſgill reported, upon his return, that he had found a good harbour, with every conveniency. As I liked the ſituation of this, better than the other of my own finding, I determined to go there in the morning. The fiſhing boat was very ſucceſsful; returning with fiſh ſufficient for all hands for ſupper; and, in a few hours in the morning, caught as many as ſerved for dinner. This gave us certain hopes of being plentifully ſupplied with this article. Nor did the ſhores and woods appear leſs deſtitute of wild fowl; ſo that we hoped to enjoy, with eaſe, what, in our ſituation, might be called the luxuries of life. This determined me to ſtay ſome time in this bay, in order to examine it thoroughly; as no one had ever landed before, on any of the ſouthern parts of this country. 1773. March. Friday 26.

On the 27th, at nine o'clock in the morning, we got under ſail with a light breeze at S. W., and working over to Pickerſgill Harbour, entered it by a channel ſcarcely twice the width of the ſhip; and, in a ſmall creek, moored head Saturday 27.

and

1773. March. Saturday 27.

and ſtern, ſo near the ſhore as to reach it with a brow or ſtage, which Nature had in a manner prepared for us in a large tree, whoſe end or top reached our gunwale. Wood, for fewel and other purpoſes, was here ſo convenient, that our yards were locked in the branches of the trees; and, about 100 yards from our ſtern, was a fine ſtream of freſh water. Thus ſituated, we began to clear places in the woods, in order to ſet up the aſtronomer's obſervatory, the forge to repair our iron work, tents for the ſail-makers and coopers to repair the ſails and caſks in; to land our empty caſks, to fill water, and to cut down wood for fewel; all of which were abſolutely neceſſary occupations. We alſo began to brew beer from the branches or leaves of a tree, which much reſembles the American black ſpruce. From the knowledge I had of this tree, and the ſimilarity it bore to the ſpruce, I judged that, with the addition of inſpiſſated juice of wort and melaſſes, it would make a very wholeſome beer, and ſupply the want of vegetables, which this place did not afford; and the event proved, that I was not miſtaken.

Now I have mentioned the inſpiſſated juice of wort, it will not be amiſs, in this place, to inform the reader that I had made ſeveral trials of it ſince I left the Cape of Good Hope, and found it to anſwer in a cold climate, beyond all expectation. The juice, diluted in warm water, in the proportion of twelve parts water to one part juice, made a very good and well-taſted ſmall beer. Some juice which I had of Mr. Pelham's own preparing, would bear ſixteen parts water. By making uſe of warm water (which I think ought always to be done), and keeping it in a warm place, if the weather be cold, no difficulty will be found in fermenting it.



N°. LI.

The SPRUCE FIR of NEW ZEELAND.

Published Feb.ʸ 1.st 1777, by Wᵐ Strahan in New Street, Shoe Lane, & Thᵒ. Cadell in the Strand, London.

it. A little grounds of either ſmall or ſtrong beer, will anſwer as well as yeaſt. 1773. March. Saturday 27.

The few ſheep and goats we had left, were not likely to fare quite ſo well as ourſelves; there being no graſs here, but what was coarſe and harſh. It was, however, not ſo bad, but that we expected they would devour it with great greedineſs, and were the more ſurpriſed to find that they would not taſte it; nor did they ſeem over fond of the leaves of more tender plants. Upon examination, we found their teeth looſe; and that many of them had every other ſymptom of an inveterate ſea ſcurvy. Out of four ewes and two rams which I brought from the Cape, with an intent to put aſhore in this country, I had only been able to preſerve one of each; and even theſe were in ſo bad a ſtate, that it was doubtful if they could recover; notwithſtanding all the care poſſible had been taken of them.

Some of the officers, on the 28th, went up the bay in a ſmall boat on a ſhooting party; but, diſcovering inhabitants, they returned before noon, to acquaint me therewith; for hitherto we had not ſeen the leaſt veſtige of any. They had but juſt got aboard, when a canoe appeared off a point about a mile from us, and ſoon after, returned behind the point out of ſight, probably owing to a ſhower of rain which then fell: for it was no ſooner over, than the canoe again appeared, and came within muſket-ſhot of the ſhip. There were in it ſeven or eight people. They remained looking at us for ſome time, and then returned; all the ſigns of friendſhip we could make, did not prevail on them to come nearer. After dinner I took two boats and went in ſearch of them, in the cove where they were firſt ſeen, accompanied by ſeveral of the officers and gentlemen. We found the Sunday 28.

canoe

1773. March. Sunday 28. canoe (at leaſt a canoe) hauled upon the ſhore near to two ſmall huts, where were ſeveral fire-places, ſome fiſhing nets, a few fiſh lying on the ſhore, and ſome in the canoe. But we ſaw no people; they, probably, had retired into the woods. After a ſhort ſtay, and leaving in the canoe ſome medals, looking-glaſſes, beads, &c. we embarked and rowed to the head of the cove, where we found nothing remarkable. In returning back we put aſhore at the ſame place as before; but ſtill ſaw no people. However, they could not be far off, as we ſmelled the ſmoke of fire, though we did not ſee it. But I did not care to ſearch farther, or to force an interview which they ſeemed to avoid; well knowing that the way to obtain this, was to leave the time and place to themſelves. It did not appear that any thing I had left had been touched; however, I now added a hatchet, and, with the night, returned on board.

Monday 29. On the 29th were ſhowers till the afternoon; when a party of the officers made an excurſion up the bay; and Mr. Forſter and his party were out botanizing. Both parties returned in the evening without meeting with any thing worthy of notice; and the two following days, every one was confined to the ſhip on account of rainy ſtormy weather.

April. Thurſday 1. In the afternoon of the 1ſt of April, accompanied by ſeveral of the gentlemen, I went to ſee if any of the articles I had left for the Indians were taken away. We found every thing remaining in the canoe; nor did it appear that any body had been there ſince. After ſhooting ſome birds, one of which was a duck, with a blue-grey plumage and ſoft bill, we, in the evening, returned on board.

Friday 2. The 2d, being a pleaſant morning, Lieutenants Clerke and Edgcumbe, and the two Mr. Forſters, went in a boat up the

the bay to ſearch for the productions of nature; and myſelf, Lieutenant Pickerſgill, and Mr. Hodges, went to take a view of the N. W. ſide. In our way, we touched at the ſeal rock, and killed three ſeals, one of which afforded us much ſport. After paſſing ſeveral iſles, we at length came to the moſt northern and weſtern arms of the bay; the ſame as is formed by the land of Five Fingers Point. In the bottom of this arm or cove, we found many ducks, wood hens, and other wild fowl, ſome of which we killed, and returned on board at ten o'clock in the evening; where the other party had arrived ſeveral hours before us, after having had but indifferent ſport. They took with them a black dog we had got at the Cape, who, at the firſt muſquet they fired, ran into the woods, from whence he would not return. The three following days were rainy; ſo that no excurſions were made. 1773. April.

Early in the morning on the 6th, a ſhooting party, made up of the officers, went to Gooſe Cove, the place where I was the 2d; and myſelf, accompanied by the two Mr. Forſters and Mr. Hodges, ſet out to continue the ſurvey of the bay. My attention was directed to the North ſide, where I diſcovered a fine capacious cove, in the bottom of which is a freſh water river; on the weſt ſide ſeveral beautiful ſmall caſcades; and the ſhores are ſo ſteep that a ſhip might lie near enough to convey the water into her by a hoſe. In this cove we ſhot fourteen ducks, beſides other birds, which occaſioned my calling it Duck Cove. Tueſday 6.

As we returned in the evening, we had a ſhort interview with three of the natives, one man and two women. They were the firſt that diſcovered themſelves on the N. E. point of Indian Iſland, named ſo on this occaſion. We ſhould

1773. April. Tueſday 6. have paſſed without ſeeing them, had not the man hallooed to us. He ſtood with his club in his hand upon the point of a rock, and behind him, at the ſkirts of the wood, ſtood the two women, with each of them a ſpear. The man could not help diſcovering great ſigns of fear when we approached the rock with our boat. He, however, ſtood firm; nor did he move to take up ſome things we threw him aſhore. At length I landed, went up and embraced him; and preſented him with ſuch articles as I had about me, which at once diſſipated his fears. Preſently after, we were joined by the two women, the gentlemen that were with me, and ſome of the ſeamen. After this, we ſpent about half an hour in chit-chat, little underſtood on either ſide, in which the youngeſt of the two women, bore by far the greateſt ſhare. This occaſioned one of the ſeamen to ſay, that women did not want tongue in any part of the world. We preſented them with fiſh and fowl which we had in our boat; but theſe they threw into the boat again, giving us to underſtand that ſuch things they wanted not. Night approaching, obliged us to take leave of them; when the youngeſt of the two women, whoſe volubility of tongue exceeded every thing I ever met with, gave us a dance; but the man viewed us with great attention. Some hours after we got on board, the other party returned, having had but indifferent ſport.

Wedneſ. 7. Next morning, I made the natives another viſit, accompanied by Mr. Forſter and Mr. Hodges, carrying with me various articles which I preſented them with, and which they received with a great deal of indifference, except hatchets and ſpike-nails; theſe they moſt eſteemed. This interview was at the ſame place as laſt night; and now we ſaw

ſaw the whole family. It conſiſted of the man, his two wives (as we ſuppoſed), the young woman before mentioned, a boy about fourteen years old, and three ſmall children, the youngeſt of which was at the breaſt. They were all well-looking, except one woman, who had a large wen on her upper lip, which made her diſagreeable; and ſhe ſeemed, on that account, to be in a great meaſure neglected by the man. They conducted us to their habitation, which was but a little way within the ſkirts of the wood, and conſiſted of two mean huts made of the bark of trees. Their canoe, which was a ſmall double one, juſt large enough to tranſport the whole family from place to place, lay in a ſmall creek near the huts. During our ſtay, Mr. Hodges made drawings of moſt of them; this occaſioned them to give him the name of *Toe-toe*, which word, we ſuppoſed, ſignifies marking or painting. When we took leave, the chief preſented me with a piece of cloth or garment of their own manufacturing, and ſome other trifles. I at firſt thought it was meant as a return for the preſents I had made him; but he ſoon undeceived me, by expreſſing a deſire for one of our boat cloaks. I took the hint, and ordered one to be made for him of red baize, as ſoon as I got aboard; where rainy weather detained me the following day. 1773. April. Wedneſ. 7.

The 9th, being fair weather, we paid the natives another viſit, and made known our approach by hallooing to them; but they neither anſwered us, nor met us at the ſhore as uſual. The reaſon of this we ſoon ſaw; for we found them at their habitations, all dreſſed and dreſſing, in their very beſt, with their hair combed and oiled, tied up upon the crowns of their heads, and ſtuck with white feathers. Some Friday 9.

1773. April. Friday 9.

wore a fillet of feathers round their heads; and all of them had bunches of white feathers ſtuck in their ears: thus dreſſed, and all ſtanding, they received us with great courteſy. I preſented the chief with the cloak I had got made for him, with which he ſeemed ſo well pleaſed, that he took his Tattapattou from his girdle, and gave it me. After a ſhort ſtay, we took leave; and having ſpent the remainder of the day in continuing my ſurvey of the bay, with the night returned on board.

Very heavy rains falling on the two following days, no Monday 12. work was done; but the 12th proved clear and ſerene, and afforded us an opportunity to dry our ſails and linen; two things very much wanted; not having had fair weather enough for this purpoſe ſince we put into this bay. Mr. Forſter and his party alſo profited by the day in botanizing.

About ten o'clock the family of the natives paid us a viſit. Seeing that they approached the ſhip with great caution, I met them in a boat, which I quitted when I got to them, and went into their canoe. Yet, after all, I could not prevail on them to put along-ſide the ſhip, and at laſt was obliged to leave them to follow their own inclination. At length they put aſhore in a little creek hard by us; and, afterwards, came and ſat down on the ſhore abreaſt of the ſhip, near enough to ſpeak with us. I now cauſed the bagpipes and fife to play, and the drum to beat. The two firſt they did not regard; but the latter cauſed ſome little attention in them; nothing, however, could induce them to come on board. But they entered, with great familiarity, into converſation (little underſtood) with ſuch of the officers and ſeamen as went to them, paying much greater regard to ſome than to others; and theſe we had reaſon to believe they

1773. April. Monday 12.

they took for females. To one man in particular, the young woman ſhewed an extraordinary fondneſs until ſhe diſcovered his ſex, after which ſhe would not ſuffer him to come near her. Whether it was that ſhe before took him for one of her own ſex; or that the man, in order to diſcover himſelf, had taken ſome liberties with her which ſhe thus reſented, I know not.

In the afternoon, I took Mr. Hodges to a large caſcade, which falls from an high mountain on the South ſide of the bay, about a leàgue above the place where we lay. He made a drawing of it on paper, and afterwards painted it in oil colours; which exhibits, at once, a better deſcription of it than any I can give. Huge heaps of ſtones lay at the foot of this caſcade, which had been broken off and brought by the ſtream from the adjacent mountains. Theſe ſtones were of different ſorts; none, however, according to Mr. Forſter's opinion (whom I believe to be a judge), containing either minerals or metals. Nevertheleſs I brought away ſpecimens of every ſort, as the whole country, that is, the rocky part of it, ſeemed to conſiſt of thoſe ſtones and no other. This caſcade is at the Eaſt point of a cove, lying in S. W. two miles, which I named Caſcade Cove. In it is good anchorage and other neceſſaries. At the entrance, lies an iſland, on each ſide of which is a paſſage; that on the Eaſt ſide is much the wideſt. A little above the iſle, and near the S. E. ſhore, are two rocks which are covered at high water. It was in this cove we firſt ſaw the natives.

When I returned aboard in the evening, I found our friends the natives had taken up their quarters about 100 yards from our watering place; a very great mark of the confidence they placed in us. This evening, a ſhooting party

1773. April. Monday 12. party of the officers went over to the North ſide of the bay, having with them the ſmall cutter to convey them from place to place.

Tueſday 13. Next morning, accompanied by Mr. Forſter, I went in the pinnace to ſurvey the iſles and rocks which lie in the mouth of the bay. I began firſt with thoſe which lie on the S. E. ſide of Anchor Iſle. I found here a very ſnug cove ſheltered from all winds, which we called Luncheon Cove, becauſe here we dined on cray-fiſh, on the ſide of a pleaſant brook, ſhaded by the trees from both wind and ſun. After dinner we proceeded, by rowing, out to the utermoſt iſles, where we ſaw many ſeals, fourteen of which we killed and brought away with us; and might have got many more, if the ſurf had permitted us to land, with ſafety, on all the rocks. The next morning, I went out again to continue the ſurvey, accompanied by Mr. Forſter. I intended to have landed again on the Seal Iſles; but there ran ſuch a high ſea that I could not come near them. With ſome difficulty we rowed out to ſea, and round the S. W. point of Anchor Iſle. It happened very fortunately that chance directed me to take this courſe; in which we found the ſportſmen's boat adrift, and laid hold of her the very moment ſhe would have been daſhed againſt the rocks. I was not long at a loſs to gueſs how ſhe came there, nor was I under any apprehenſions for the gentlemen that had been in her; and, after refreſhing ourſelves with ſuch as we had to eat and drink, and ſecuring the boat in a ſmall creek, we proceeded to the place where we ſuppoſed them to be. This we reached about ſeven or eight o'clock in the evening, and found them upon a ſmall iſle in Gooſe Cove, where, as it was low water, we could not come with our boat until the return of the tide. As this did not happen till three

o'clock

o'clock in the morning, we landed on a naked beach, not knowing where to find a better place, and, after ſome time, having got a fire and broiled ſome fiſh, we made a hearty ſupper, having for ſauce a good appetite. This done, we lay down to ſleep, having a ſtony beach for a bed, and the canopy of heaven for a covering. At length the tide permitted us to take off the ſportſmen; and with them we embarked, and proceeded for the place where we had left their boat, which we ſoon reached, having a freſh breeze of wind in our favour attended with rain. When we came to the creek which was on the N. W. ſide of Anchor Iſle, we found there an immenſe number of blue peterels, ſome on the wing, others in the woods in holes in the ground, under the roots of trees, and in the crevices of rocks, where there was no getting them, and where we ſuppoſed their young were depoſited. As not one was to be ſeen in the day, the old ones were probably, at that time, out at ſea ſearching for food, which in the evening they bring to their young. The noiſe they made was like the croaking of many frogs. They were, I believe, of the broad bill kind, which are not ſo commonly ſeen at ſea as the others. Here, however, they are in great numbers; and, flying much about in the night, ſome of our gentlemen at firſt took them for batts. After reſtoring the ſportſmen to their boat, we all proceeded for the ſhip, which we reached by ſeven o'clock in the morning, not a little fatigued with our expedition. I now learned that our friends the natives returned to their habitation at night; probably foreſeeing that rain was at hand; which ſort of weather continued the whole of this day.

1773. April. Tueſday 13. Wedneſ. 14.

On the morning of the 15th, the weather having cleared up and become fair, I ſet out with two boats to continue the Thurſday 15.

1773. April. Thurſday 15. ſurvey of the N. W. ſide of the bay, accompanied by the two Mr. Forſters and ſeveral of the officers, whom I detached in one boat to Gooſe Cove, where we intended to lodge the night, while I proceeded in the other, examining the harbours and iſles which lay in my way. In the doing of this, I picked up about a ſcore of wild fowl, and caught fiſh ſufficient to ſerve the whole party; and, reaching the place of rendezvous a little before dark, I found all the gentlemen out duck-ſhooting. They, however, ſoon returned, not overloaded with game. By this time, the cooks had done their parts, in which little art was required; and after a hearty repaſt, on what the day had produced, we lay down to reſt; but took care to riſe early, the next morning, in order to have the other bout among the ducks, before we left the cove.

Friday 16. Accordingly, at day-light, we prepared for the attack. Thoſe who had reconnoitred the place before, choſe their ſtations accordingly; whilſt myſelf and another remained in the boat, and rowed to the head of the cove to ſtart the game; which we did ſo effectually, that, out of ſome ſcores of ducks, we only detained one to ourſelves, ſending all the reſt down to thoſe ſtationed below. After this, I landed at the head of the cove, and walked croſs the narrow iſthmus that disjoins it from the ſea, or rather from another cove which runs in from the ſea about one mile, and lies open to the North winds. It, however, had all the appearance of a good harbour and ſafe anchorage. At the head is a find ſandy beach, where I found an immenſe number of wood hens, and brought away ten couple of them, which recompenſed me for the trouble of croſſing the iſthmus, through the wet woods, up to the middle in water. About nine

nine o'clock, we all got collected together, when the ſucceſs of every one was known; which was by no means anſwerable to our expectations. The morning, indeed, was very unfavourable for ſhooting, being rainy the moſt of the time we were out. After breakfaſt, we ſet out on our return to the ſhip, which we reached by ſeven o'clock in the evening; with about ſeven dozen of wild fowl, and two ſeals; the moſt of them ſhot while I was rowing about, exploring the harbours and coves which I found in my way; every place affording ſomething; eſpecially to us, to whom nothing came amiſs. 1773. April. Friday 16.

It rained all the 17th; but the 18th bringing fair and clear weather, in the evening, our friends the natives before mentioned paid us another viſit; and, the next morning, the chief and his daughter were induced to come on board, while the others went out in the canoe fiſhing. Before they came on board I ſhewed them our goats and ſheep that were on ſhore; which they viewed, for a moment, with a kind of ſtupid inſenſibility. After this, I conducted them to the brow; but before the chief ſet his foot upon it to come into the ſhip, he took a ſmall green branch in his hand, with which he ſtruck the ſhip's ſide ſeveral times, repeating a ſpeech or prayer. When this was over, he threw the branch into the main chains, and came on board. This cuſtom and manner of making peace, as it were, is practiſed by all the nations in the South Seas that I have ſeen. Saturday 17. Sunday 18. Monday 19.

I took them both down into the cabin, where we were to breakfaſt. They ſat at table with us, but would not taſte any of our victuals. The chief wanted to know where we ſlept, and indeed to pry into every corner of the cabin, every part of which he viewed with ſome ſurpriſe. But

1773. April. Monday 19. it was not poſſible to fix his attention to any one thing a ſingle moment. The works of art appeared to him in the ſame light as thoſe of nature, and were as far removed beyond his comprehenſion. What ſeemed to ſtrike them moſt was the number and ſtrength of our decks, and other parts of the ſhip. The chief, before he came aboard, preſented me with a piece of cloth and a green talk hatchet; to Mr. Forſter he alſo gave a piece of cloth; and the girl gave another to Mr. Hodges. This cuſtom of making preſents, before they receive any, is common with the natives of the South Sea iſles; but I never ſaw it practiſed in New Zealand before. Of all the various articles I gave my gueſt, hatchets and ſpike-nails were the moſt valuable in his eyes. Theſe he never would ſuffer to go out of his hands after he had once laid hold of them; whereas many other articles he would lay careleſsly down any where, and at laſt leave them behind him.

As ſoon as I could get quit of them, they were conducted into the gun-room, where I left them, and ſet out with two boats to examine the head of the bay; myſelf in one, accompanied by Mr. Forſter and Mr. Hodges; and Lieutenant Cooper in the other. We proceeded up the South ſide; and without meeting with any thing remarkable, got to the head of the bay by ſun-ſet; where we took up our lodging for the night, at the firſt place we could land upon; for the flats hindered us from getting quite to the head.

Tueſday 20 At day-light in the morning, I took two men in the ſmall boat, and, with Mr. Forſter, went to take a view of the flat land at the head of the bay, near to where we ſpent the night. We landed on one ſide, and ordered the boat to meet us on the other ſide; but had not been long on

ſhore before we ſaw ſome ducks, which, by their creeping through the buſhes, we got a ſhot at, and killed one. The moment we had fired, the natives, whom we had not diſcovered before, ſet up a moſt hideous noiſe in two or three places cloſe by us. We hallooed in our turn; and, at the ſame time, retired to our boat, which was full half a mile off. The natives kept up their clamouring noiſe, but did not follow us. Indeed we found, afterwards, that they could not; becauſe of a branch of the river between us and them; nor did we find their numbers anſwerable to the noiſe they made. As ſoon as we got to our boat, and found that there was a river that would admit us, I rowed in, and was ſoon after joined by Mr. Cooper, in the other boat. With this reinforcement I proceeded up the river, ſhooting wild ducks, of which there were great numbers; as we went along, now and then, hearing the natives in the woods. At length two appeared on the banks of the river, a man and a woman; and the latter kept waving ſomething white in her hand, as a ſign of friendſhip. Mr. Cooper being near them, I called to him to land, as I wanted to take the advantage of the tide to get as high up as poſſible, which did not much exceed half a mile, when I was ſtopped by the ſtrength of the ſtream and great ſtones which lay in the bed of the river.

1773. April. Tueſday 20.

On my return, I found that, as Mr. Cooper did not land when the natives expected him, they had retired into the woods; but two others now appeared on the oppoſite bank. I endeavoured to have an interview with them; but this I could not effect. For, as I approached the ſhore, they always retired farther into the woods, which were ſo thick as to cover them from our ſight. The falling tide

1773. April. Tueſday 20. obliged me to retire out of the river, to the place where we had ſpent the night. There we breakfaſted, and afterwards embarked, in order to return on board; but, juſt as we were going, we ſaw two men, on the oppoſite ſhore, hallooing to us, which induced me to row over to them. I landed, with two others, unarmed; the two natives ſtanding about 100 yards from the water ſide, with each a ſpear in his hand. When we three advanced, they retired; but ſtood when I advanced alone.

It was ſome little time before I could prevail upon them to lay down their ſpears. This, at laſt, one of them did; and met me with a graſs plant in his hand, one end of which he gave me to hold, while he held the other. Standing in this manner, he began a ſpeech, not one word of which I underſtood; and made ſome long pauſes; waiting, as I thought, for me to anſwer; for, when I ſpoke, he proceeded. As ſoon as this ceremony was over, which was not long, we ſaluted each other. He then took his Hahou, or coat, from off his own back, and put it upon mine; after which peace ſeemed firmly eſtabliſhed. More people joining us did not in the leaſt alarm them; on the contrary they ſaluted every one as he came up.

I gave to each a hatchet and a knife, having nothing elſe with me: perhaps theſe were the moſt valuable things I could give them; at leaſt they were the moſt uſeful. They wanted us to go to their habitation, telling us they would give us ſomething to eat; and I was ſorry that the tide, and other circumſtances, would not permit me to accept of their invitation. More people were ſeen in the ſkirts of the wood, but none of them joined us; probably theſe were their wives and children. When we took leave they followed

lowed us to our boat, and ſeeing the muſquets lying acroſs the ſtern, they made ſigns for them to be taken away; which being done, they came along-ſide and aſſiſted us to launch her. At this time, it was neceſſary for us to look well after them, for they wanted to take away every thing they could lay their hands upon, except the muſquets. Theſe they took care not to touch, being taught by the ſlaughter they had ſeen us make among the wild fowl, to look upon them as inſtruments of death. 1773. April. Tueſday 20.

We ſaw no canoes or other boats with them; two or three logs of wood tied together ſerved the ſame purpoſe; and were indeed ſufficient for the navigation of the river, on the banks of which they lived. There fiſh and fowl were in ſuch plenty, that they had no occaſion to go far for food; and they have but few neighbours to diſturb them. The whole number at this place, I believe, does not exceed three families.

It was noon when we took leave of theſe two men, and proceeded down the North ſide of the bay; which I explored in my way, and the iſles that lie in the middle. Night, however, overtook us, and obliged me to leave one arm unlooked into, and haſten to the ſhip, which we reached by eight o'clock. I then learnt that the man and his daughter ſtayed on board the day before till noon; and that, having underſtood from our people what things were left in Caſcade Cove, the place where they were firſt ſeen, he ſent and took them away. He and his family remained near us till to-day, when they all went away, and we ſaw them no more; which was the more extraordinary, as he never left us empty-handed. From one or another he did not get leſs than nine or ten hatchets, three or four times that

1773. April. Tueſday 20. number of large ſpike-nails, beſides many other articles. So far as theſe things may be counted riches in New Zealand, he exceeds every man there; being at this time poſſeſſed of more hatchets and axes than are in the whole country beſides.

Wedneſ. 21. In the afternoon of the 21ſt, I went with a party out to the iſles on ſeal hunting. The ſurf ran ſo high that we could only land in one place, where we killed ten. Theſe animals ſerved us for three purpoſes; the ſkins we made uſe of for our rigging; the fat gave oil for our lamps; and the fleſh we eat. Their harſlets are equal to that of a hog, and the fleſh of ſome of them eats little inferior to beef-ſteaks. The following day nothing worthy of notice was done.

Friday 23. In the morning of the 23d, Mr. Pickerſgill, Mr. Gilbert, and two others, went to the Caſcade Cove, in order to aſcend one of the mountains, the ſummit of which they reached by two o'clock in the afternoon, as we could ſee by the fire they made. In the evening they returned on board, and reported that, in land, nothing was to be ſeen but barren mountains with huge craggy precipices, disjoined by valleys, or rather chaſms, frightful to behold. On the S. E. ſide of Cape Weſt, four miles out at ſea, they diſcovered a ridge of rocks, on which the waves broke very high. I believe theſe rocks to be the ſame we ſaw the evening we firſt fell in with the land.

Having five geeſe left out of thoſe we brought from the Saturday 24. Cape of Good Hope, I went with them next morning to Gooſe Cove (named ſo on this account), where I left them. I choſe this place for two reaſons; firſt, here are no inhabitants to diſturb them; and ſecondly, here being the moſt food, I make no doubt but that they will breed, and may in

in time ſpread over the whole country, and fully anſwer my intention in leaving them. We ſpent the day ſhooting in and about the Cove, and returned aboard about ten o'clock in the evening. One of the party ſhot a white hern, which agreed exactly with Mr. Pennant's deſcription, in his Britiſh Zoology, of the white herns that either now are, or were formerly, in England. 1773. April. Saturday 24.

The 25th was the eighth fair day we had had ſucceſſively; a circumſtance, I believe, very uncommon in this place, eſpecially at this ſeaſon of the year. This fair weather gave us an opportunity to complete our wood and water, to overhaul the rigging, caulk the ſhip, and put her in a condition for ſea. Fair weather was, however, now at an end; for it began to rain this evening, and continued, without intermiſſion, till noon the next day, when we caſt off the ſhore faſts, hove the ſhip out of the creek to her anchor, and ſteadied her with an hawſer to the ſhore. Sunday 25. Monday 26.

On the 27th, hazy weather, with ſhowers of rain. In the morning I ſet out, accompanied by Mr. Pickerſgill and the two Mr. Forſters, to explore the arm or inlet I diſcovered the day I returned from the head of the bay. After rowing about two leagues up it, or rather down, I found it to communicate with the ſea, and to afford a better outlet for ſhips bound to the North than the one I came in by. After making this diſcovery, and refreſhing ourſelves on broiled fiſh and wild fowl, we ſet out for the ſhip, and got on board at eleven o'clock at night; leaving two arms we had diſcovered, and which run into the Eaſt, unexplored. In this expedition we ſhot forty-four birds, ſea-pies, ducks, &c. without going one foot out of our way, or cauſing any other delay than picking them up. Tueſday 27.

Having

1773. April. Wedneſ. 28. Having got the tents and every other article on board on the 28th, we only now waited for a wind to carry us out of the harbour, and through New Paſſage, the way I propoſed to go to ſea. Every thing being removed from the ſhore, I ſet fire to the top-wood, &c. in order to dry a piece Thurſday 29. of the ground we had occupied, which, next morning, I dug up, and ſowed with ſeveral ſorts of garden ſeeds. The ſoil was ſuch as did not promiſe ſucceſs to the planter; it was, however, the beſt we could find. At two o'clock in the afternoon, we weighed with a light breeze at S. W., and ſtood up the bay for the new paſſage. Soon after we had got through, between the Eaſt end of Indian Iſland and the Weſt end of Long Iſland, it fell calm, which obliged us to anchor in forty-three fathom water, under the North ſide of the latter iſland.

Friday 30. In the morning of the 30th we weighed again with a light breeze at Weſt, which, together with all our boats a-head towing, was hardly ſufficient to ſtem the current. For, after ſtruggling till ſix o'clock in the evening, and not getting more than five miles from our laſt anchoring-place, we anchored under the North ſide of Long Iſland, not more than one hundred yards from the ſhore, to which we faſtened a hawſer.

May. Saturday 1. At day-light next morning, May 1ſt, we got again under ſail, and attempted to work to windward, having a light breeze down the bay. At firſt, we gained ground; but at laſt, the breeze died away; when we ſoon loſt more than we had got, and were obliged to bear up for a cove on the North ſide of Long Iſland, where we anchored in nineteen fathom water, a muddy bottom: in this cove we found two huts not long ſince inhabited; and near them two very large fire-

fire-places or ovens, ſuch as they have in the Society Iſles. In this cove we were detained by calms, attended with continual rain, till the 4th in the afternoon, when, with the aſſiſtance of a ſmall breeze at S. W., we got the length of the reach or paſſage leading to ſea. The breeze then left us, and we anchored under the Eaſt point, before a ſandy beach, in thirty fathoms water; but this anchoring place hath nothing to recommend it like the one we came from, which hath every thing in its favour. 1773. May. Tueſday 4.

In the night we had ſome very heavy ſqualls of wind, attended with rain, hail, and ſnow, and ſome thunder. Day-light exhibited to our view all the hills and mountains covered with ſnow. At two o'clock in the afternoon, a light breeze ſprung up at S. S. W., which, with the help of our boats, carried us down the paſſage to our intended anchoring-place, where, at eight o'clock, we anchored in ſixteen fathoms water and moored, with a hawſer to the ſhore, under the firſt point on the ſtarboard ſide, as you come in from ſea; from which we were covered by the point. Wedneſ. 5.

In the morning of the 6th, I ſent Lieutenant Pickerſgill, accompanied by the two Mr. Forſters, to explore the ſecond arm which turns in to the Eaſt, myſelf being confined on board by a cold. At the ſame time, I had every thing got up from between decks, the decks well cleaned and well aired with fires; a thing that ought never to be long neglected in wet moiſt weather. The fair weather, which had continued all this day, was ſucceeded in the night by a ſtorm from N. W., which blew in hard ſqualls, attended with rain, and obliged us to ſtrike top-gallant and lower yards, and to carry out another hawſer to the ſhore. The bad weather con- Thurſday 6.

1773. May. tinued the whole day and the ſucceeding night, after which it fell calm, with fair weather.

Saturday 8. At ſeven in the morning on the 8th, Mr. Pickerſgill returned, together with his companions, in no very good plight; having been at the head of the arm he was ſent to explore, which he judged to extend in to the Eaſtward about eight miles. In it is a good anchoring-place, wood, freſh water, wild fowl and fiſh. At nine o'clock I ſet out to explore the other inlet, or the one next the ſea; and ordered Mr. Gilbert the maſter to go and examine the paſſage out to ſea, while thoſe on board were getting every thing in readineſs to depart. I proceeded up the inlet till five o'clock in the afternoon, when bad weather obliged me to return, before I had ſeen the end of it. As this inlet lay nearly parallel with the ſea-coaſt, I was of opinion that it might communicate with Doubtful Harbour, or ſome other inlet to the Northward. Appearances were, however, againſt this opinion, and the bad weather hindered me from determining the point, although a few hours would have done it. I was about ten miles up, and thought I ſaw the end of it: I found on the North ſide three coves, in which, as alſo on the South ſide, between the main and the iſles that lie about four miles up the inlet, is good anchorage, wood, water, and what elſe can be expected, ſuch as fiſh and wild fowl: of the latter we killed, in this excurſion, three dozen. After a very hard row, againſt both wind and rain, we got on board about nine o'clock at night, without a dry thread on our backs.

Sunday 9. This bad weather continued no longer than till the next morning, when it became fair, and the ſky cleared up. But as we had not wind to carry us to ſea, we made up two

ſhooting;

ſhooting parties; myſelf, accompanied by the two Mr. Forſters and ſome others, went to the arm I was in the day before; and the other party to the coves and iſles Mr. Gilbert had diſcovered, when he was out, and where he found many wild fowl. We had a pleaſant day, and the evening brought us all on board; myſelf and party met with good ſport; but the other party found little. 1773. May. Sunday 9.

All the forenoon of the 10th, we had ſtrong gales from the Weſt, attended with heavy ſhowers of rain, and blowing in ſuch flurries over high land, as made it unſafe for us to get under ſail. The afternoon was more moderate, and became fair; when myſelf, Mr. Cooper, and ſome others, went out in the boats to the rocks, which lie at this entrance of the bay, to kill ſeals. The weather was rather unfavourable for this ſport, and the ſea ran high, ſo as to make landing difficult; we, however, killed ten; but could only wait to bring away five, with which we returned on board. Monday 10.

In the morning of the 11th, while we were getting under ſail, I ſent a boat for the other five ſeals. At nine o'clock we weighed, with a light breeze at S. E., and ſtood out to ſea, taking up the boat in our way. It was noon before we got clear of the land; at which time we obſerved in 45° 34′ 30″ South; the entrance of the bay bore S. E. by E. and Break-ſea iſles (the outermoſt iſles that lie at the South point of the entrance of the bay) bore S. S. E. diſtant three miles; the ſouthernmoſt point, or that of Five Fingers Point, bore South 42° Weſt; and the northernmoſt land N. N. E. In this ſituation we had a prodigious ſwell from S. W., which broke, with great violence, on all the ſhores that were expoſed to it. Tueſday 11.

CHAP. V.

Directions for ſailing in and out of Duſky Bay, with an Account of the adjacent Country, its Produce and Inhabitants: Aſtronomical and Nautical Obſervations.

1773. May. AS there are few places where I have been in New Zealand, that afford the neceſſary refreſhments in ſuch plenty as Duſky Bay, a ſhort deſcription of it, and of the adjacent country, may prove of uſe to ſome future navigators, as well as acceptable to the curious reader. For although this country be far remote from the preſent trading part of the world, we can, by no means, tell what uſe future ages may make of the diſcoveries made in the preſent. The reader of this journal muſt already know that there are two entrances to this bay. The South entrance is ſituated on the North ſide of Cape Weſt, in latitude 45° 48′ South. It is formed by the land of the Cape to the South, and Five Fingers Point to the North. This point is made remarkable by ſeveral pointed rocks lying off it, which, when viewed from certain ſituations, have ſome reſemblance to the five fingers of a man's hand; from whence it takes its name. The land of this point is ſtill more remarkable by the little ſimilarity it bears to any other of the lands adjacent; being a narrow peninſula lying North and South, of a moderate and equal height, and all covered with wood.

To ſail into the bay by this entrance is by no means difficult, as I know of no danger but what ſhews itſelf. The worſt that attends it, is the depth of water, which is too great

Point Five Fingers
Parrot Isle
Goose Cove
Shag River
Cormorant Cove
Wood Hen Cove
Break-fe. Islan
RESOLUTIO
Facill Harbour
Pidgeon Isle
Boat Paſsage
Earthell Cove
Little Harbour & Isles
Pirel Isles
Anchor Island Harbour
ANCHOR ISLAND
ISLAND
Bafon
Seal Isles
Luncheon I.
Many Isles
Stop I.
Ufdefs Isle
Anchor Point
Prove I.
Neal Rock
Flat Head
Duck Cove
Nomans Isle
South Point
Thrum Cap
Shelter Cove
Indian Isle
Indian Cove
Two Sifters
Station Isle
West I.
PICKERSGILL HARB.
Curlew I.
Small Creek
Arrow Creek
Deſolation Cove
Paſsage Point
Front I
LONG ISLAND
Cafcade Cove
Cafcade
Paſsage Isles
1 2 3 4 5 6
A Scale of Miles
W Whitchurch fc

published Feb.y 1.st 1777 by W.m Strahan in New Stree

SKETCH OF
DUSKY BAY in NEW ZEELAND;
1773.



ſlington: 1776.

e Lane & The Cadell in the Strand London.

N° XIII

great to admit of anchorage, except in the coves and harbours, and very near the ſhores; and even, in many places, this laſt cannot be done. The anchoring-places are, however, numerous enough, and equally ſafe and commodious. Pickerſgill harbour, where we lay, is not inferior to any other bay, for two or three ſhips: it is ſituated on the South ſhore abreaſt of the Weſt end of Indian Iſland; which iſland may be known from the others by its greater proximity to that ſhore. There is a paſſage into the harbour on both ſides of the iſle, which lies before it. The moſt room is on the upper or Eaſt ſide, having regard to a ſunken rock, near the main, abreaſt this end of the iſle: keep the iſle cloſe aboard, and you will not only avoid the rock, but keep in anchoring ground. The next place, on this ſide, is Caſcade Cove; where there is room for a fleet of ſhips, and alſo a paſſage in, on either ſide of the iſle which lies in the entrance; taking care to avoid a ſunken rock which lies near the S. E. ſhore, a little above the iſle. This rock, as well as the one in Pickerſgill Harbour, may be ſeen at half ebb. 1773. May.

It muſt be needleſs to enumerate all the anchoring places in this capacious bay; one or two, on each ſide, will be quite ſufficient. Thoſe who want to be acquainted with more, need only conſult the annexed chart; which they may depend upon as being without any material error. To ſuch as put into this bay, and are afterwards bound to the South, I would recommend Facile Harbour. To ſail into this harbour, keep the inſide of the land of Five Fingers Point aboard, until you are the length of the iſles, which lie abreaſt the middle of that land. Haul round the North point of theſe iſles, and you will have the harbour before

you

1773. May.

you bearing Eaſt. But the chart will be a ſufficient guide, not only to ſail into this, but into all the other anchoring-places, as well as to ſail quite through, from the South to the North entrance. However, I ſhall give ſome directions for this navigation. In coming in at the South entrance, keep the South ſhore aboard, until you approach the Weſt end of Indian Iſland, which you will know not only by its apparent, but real nearneſs to the ſhore. From this ſituation, it will appear as a point dividing the bay into two arms. Leave this iſle on your ſtarboard ſide, and continue your courſe up the bay, which is E. by N. $\frac{1}{2}$ N., without turning either to the right or left. When you are abreaſt, or above the Eaſt end of this iſle, you will find the bay of a conſiderable breadth; and, higher up, to be contracted by two projecting points. Three miles above the one, on the North ſide, and abreaſt of two ſmall iſles, is the paſſage out to ſea, or to the North entrance; and this lies nearly in the direction of N. by W. and S. by E.

The North entrance lies in the latitude of 45° 38′ South, and five leagues to the North of Five Fingers Point. To make this entrance plain, it will be neceſſary to approach the ſhore within a few miles; as all the land within, and on each ſide, is of conſiderable height. Its ſituation may, however, be known at a greater diſtance; as it lies under the firſt craggy mountains which riſe to the North of the land of Five Fingers Point. The ſouthernmoſt of theſe mountains is remarkable; having at its ſummit two ſmall hillocks. When this mountain bears S. S. E., you will be before the entrance, on the South ſide of which are ſeveral iſles. The weſternmoſt and outermoſt is the moſt conſiderable, both for height and circuit; and this I have called Break-ſea Iſle, becauſe it effectually

ally covers this entrance from the violence of the S. W. ſwell, which the other entrance is ſo much expoſed to. In ſailing in, you leave this iſle, as well as all the others, to the South. The beſt anchorage is in the firſt or North arm, which is on the larboard hand going in, either in one of the coves, or behind the iſles that lie under the S. E. ſhore. 1773. May.

The country is exceedingly mountainous; not only about Duſky Bay, but through all the ſouthern part of this weſtern coaſt of Tavai Pocnammoo. A proſpect more rude and craggy is rarely to be met with; for inland appears nothing but the ſummits of mountains of a ſtupendous height, and conſiſting of rocks that are totally barren and naked, except where they are covered with ſnow. But the land bordering on the ſea-coaſt, and all the iſlands, are thickly clothed with wood, almoſt down to the water's edge. The trees are of various kinds, ſuch as are common to other parts of this country, and are fit for the ſhipwright, houſe-carpenter, cabinet-maker, and many other uſes. Except in the river Thames, I have not ſeen finer timber in all New Zealand: both here and in that river, the moſt conſiderable for ſize is the Spruce tree, as we called it from the ſimilarity of its foliage to the American Spruce, though the wood is more ponderous and bears a greater reſemblance to the Pitch pine. Many of theſe trees are from ſix to eight and ten feet in girt, and from ſixty to eighty or one hundred feet in length; large enough to make a main-maſt for a fifty gun ſhip.

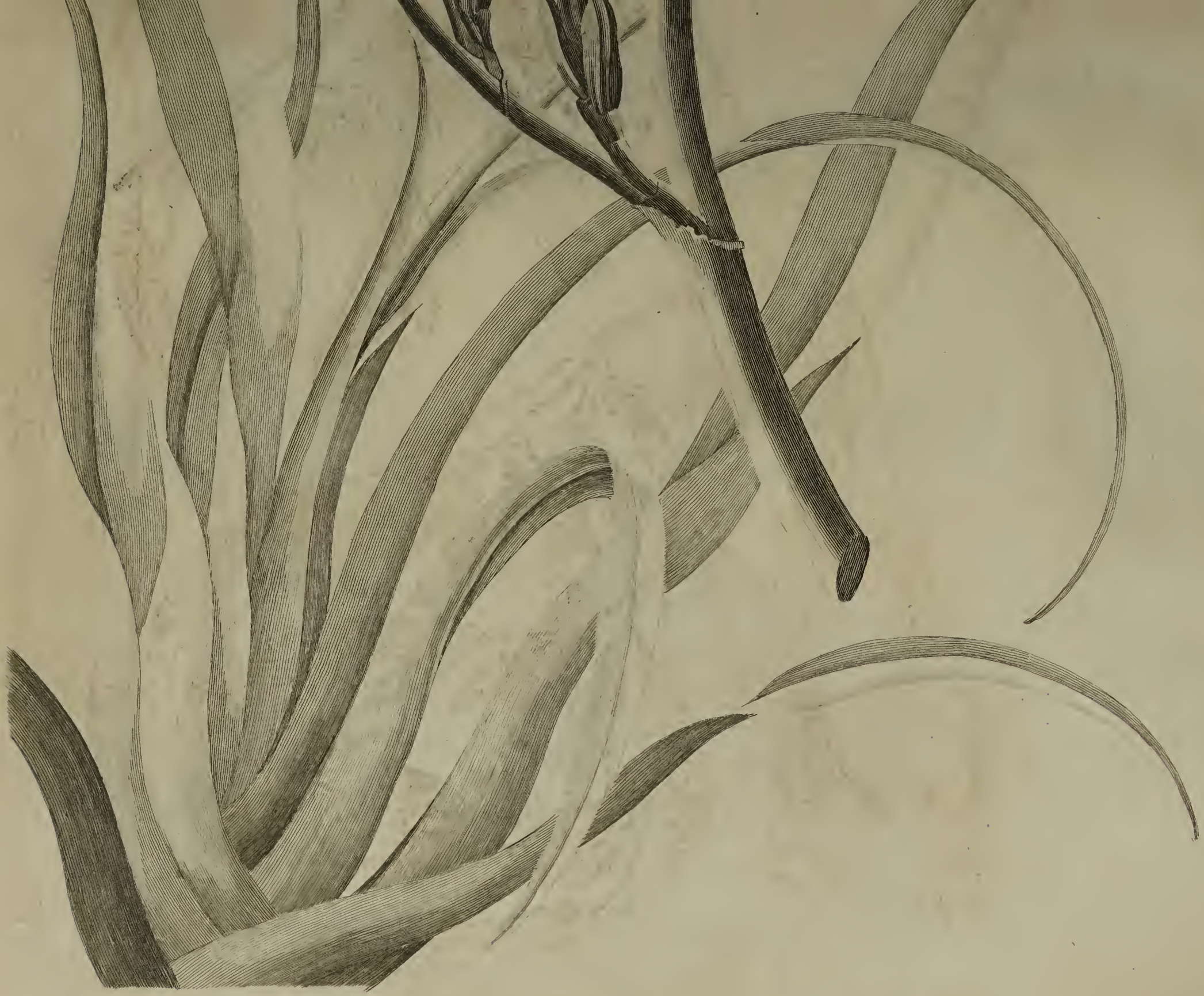
Here are, as well as in all other parts of New Zealand, a great number of aromatic trees and ſhrubs, moſt of the myrtle kind; but amidſt all this variety we met with none which bore fruit fit to eat.

1773. May.

In many parts the woods are ſo over-run with ſuple-jacks, that it is ſcarcely poſſible to force one's way amongſt them. I have ſeen ſeveral which were fifty or ſixty fathoms long.

The ſoil is a deep black mould, evidently compoſed of decayed vegetables, and ſo looſe that it ſinks under you at every ſtep; and this may be the reaſon why we meet with ſo many large trees, as we do, blown down by the wind, even in the thickeſt part of the woods. All the ground amongſt the trees is covered with moſs and fern, of both which there is a great variety; but except the flax or hemp plant, and a few other plants, there is very little herbage of any ſort, and none that was eatable, that we found, except about a handful of water-creſſes, and about the ſame quantity of cellery. What Duſky Bay moſt abounds with is fiſh: a boat with ſix or eight men, with hooks and lines, caught daily ſufficient to ſerve the whole ſhip's company. Of this article the variety is almoſt equal to the plenty; and of ſuch kinds as are common to the more northern coaſt; but ſome are ſuperior; and in particular the cole fiſh, as we called it, which is both larger and finer flavored than any I had ſeen before, and was, in the opinion of moſt on board, the higheſt luxury the ſea afforded us. The ſhell fiſh are, muſcles, cockles, ſcallops, cray-fiſh, and many other ſorts; all ſuch as are to be found in every other part of the coaſt. The only amphibious animals, are ſeals. Theſe are to be found in great numbers, about this bay, on the ſmall rocks and iſles near the ſea coaſt.

We found here five different kinds of ducks, ſome of which I do not recollect to have any where ſeen before. The largeſt are as big as a Muſcovy duck, with a very beautiful variegated plumage, on which account we called it the



Published Feb.ry 1.st 1777 by Wm. Strahan in New Street Shoe Lane & Thos. Cadell in the Strand London.

N.° XXIII





POE-BIRD, NEW-ZEELAND. Nº LII.

Published Feb.y 1.st 1777 by Wm Strahan in New Street Shoe Lane, & Thos Cadell in the Strand London.

the Painted duck; both male and female have a large white ſpot on each wing; the head and neck of the latter is white, but all the other feathers, as well as thoſe on the head and neck of the drake, are of a dark variegated colour. The ſecond ſort have a brown plumage, with bright green feathers in their wings, and are about the ſize of an Engliſh tame duck. The third ſort is the blue-grey duck before mentioned, or the whiſtling duck, as ſome called them from the whiſtling noiſe they made. What is moſt remarkable in theſe is, that the end of their beaks is ſoft, and of a ſkinny, or more properly, cartilaginous ſubſtance. The fourth ſort is ſomething bigger than teal, and all black except the drake, which has ſome white feathers in his wing. There are but few of this ſort; and we ſaw them no where but in the river at the head of the bay. The laſt ſort is a good deal like a teal, and very common, I am told, in England. The other fowls, whether belonging to the ſea or land, are the ſame that are to be found in common in other parts of this country, except the blue peterel before mentioned, and the water or wood hens. Theſe laſt, although they are numerous enough here, are ſo ſcarce in other parts, that I never ſaw but one. The reaſon may be, that, as they cannot fly, they inhabit the ſkirts of the woods, and feed on the ſea beach; and are ſo very tame or fooliſh, as to ſtand and ſtare at us till we knocked them down with a ſtick. The natives may have, in a manner, wholly deſtroyed them. They are a ſort of rail, about the ſize and a good deal like a common dunghill hen, moſt of them are of a dirty black or dark brown colour, and eat very well in a pye or fricaſſée. Amongſt the ſmall birds I muſt not omit to particulariſe the wattle-bird, poy-bird, and fan-tail, on

1773. May.

1773. May. account of their ſingularity, eſpecially as I find they are not mentioned in the narrative of my former voyage.

The wattle-bird, ſo called becauſe it has two wattles under its beak as large as thoſe of a ſmall dunghill cock, is larger, particularly in length, than an Engliſh black-bird. Its bill is ſhort and thick, and its feathers of a dark lead colour; the colour of its wattles is a dull yellow, almoſt an orange colour.

The poy-bird is leſs than the wattle-bird. The feathers of a fine mazarine blue, except thoſe of its neck, which are of a moſt beautiful ſilver-grey, and two or three ſhort white ones, which are on the pinion joint of the wing. Under its throat hang two little tufts of curled, ſnow-white feathers, called its *poies*, which being the Otaheitean word for ear-rings, occaſioned our giving that name to the bird; which is not more remarkable for the beauty of its plumage than for the ſweetneſs of its note. The fleſh is alſo moſt delicious, and was the greateſt luxury the woods afforded us.

Of the fan-tail, there are different ſorts, but the body of the moſt remarkable one is ſcarcely larger than a good filbert, yet it ſpreads a tail of moſt beautiful plumage, full three quarters of a ſemi-circle, of at leaſt four or five inches radius.

For three or four days after we arrived in Pickerſgill Harbour, and as we were clearing the woods to ſet up our tents, &c. a four-footed animal was ſeen by three or four of our people, but as no two gave the ſame deſcription of it, I cannot ſay of what kind it is. All, however, agreed, that it was about the ſize of a cat, with ſhort legs, and of a mouſe colour. One of the ſeamen, and he who had the

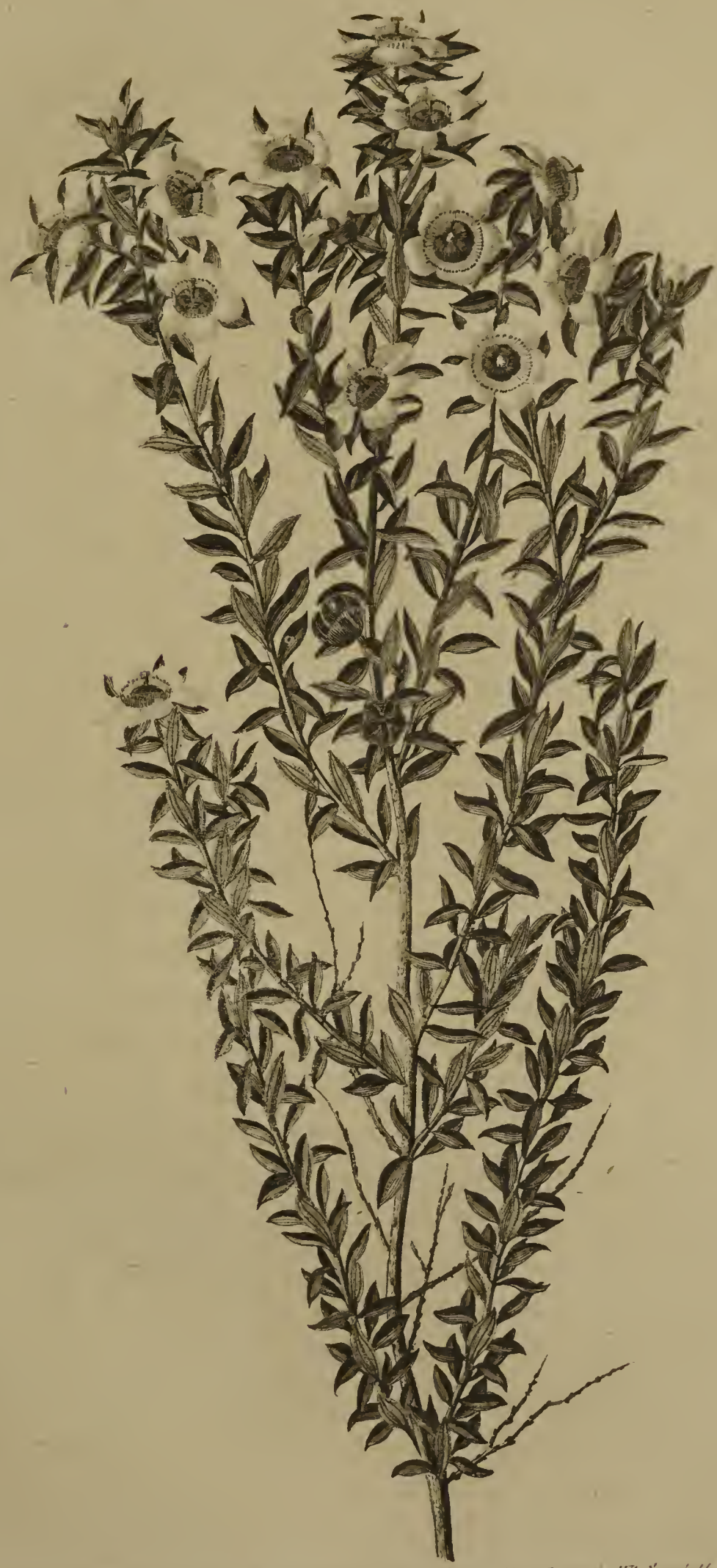
beſt view of it, ſaid it had a buſhy tail, and was the moſt like a jackall of any animal he knew. The moſt probable conjecture is, that it is of a new ſpecies. Be this as it may, we are now certain, that this country is not ſo deſtitute of quadrupeds as was once thought. 1773. May.

The moſt miſchievous animals here, are the ſmall black ſand flies, which are very numerous, and ſo troubleſome, that they exceed every thing of the kind I ever met with. Wherever they bite they cauſe a ſwelling, and ſuch an intolerable itching, that it is not poſſible to refrain from ſcratching, which at laſt brings on ulcers like the ſmall-pox.

The almoſt continual rains may be reckoned another evil attending this bay; though perhaps this may only happen at this ſeaſon of the year. Nevertheleſs, the ſituation of the country, the vaſt height, and nearneſs of the mountains, ſeem to ſubject it to much rain at all times. Our people, who were daily expoſed to the rain, felt no ill effects from it; on the contrary, ſuch as were ſick and ailing when we came in, recovered daily, and the whole crew ſoon became ſtrong and vigorous; which can only be attributed to the healthineſs of the place, and the freſh proviſions it afforded. The beer certainly contributed not a little. As I have already obſerved, we at firſt made it of a decoction of the ſpruce leaves; but finding that this alone made the beer too aſtringent, we afterwards mixed with it an equal quantity of the tea plant (a name it obtained in my former voyage from our uſing it as tea then, as we alſo did now) which partly deſtroyed the aſtringency of the other, and made the beer exceedingly palatable, and eſteemed by every one on board. We brewed it in the ſame

1773. May. manner as ſpruce beer, and the proceſs is as follows: firſt, make a ſtrong decoction of the ſmall branches of the ſpruce and tea plants, by boiling them three or four hours, or until the bark will ſtrip with eaſe from off the branches; then take them out of the copper, and put in the proper quantity of melaſſes; ten gallons of which is ſufficient to make a ton or two hundred and forty gallons of beer; let this mixture juſt boil; then put it into the caſks; and, to it, add an equal quantity of cold water, more or leſs according to the ſtrength of the decoction, or your taſte: when the whole is milk-warm, put in a little grounds of beer, or yeaſt if you have it, or any thing elſe that will cauſe fermentation, and in a few days the beer will be fit to drink. After the caſks have been brewed in two or three times, the beer will generally ferment itſelf, eſpecially if the weather is warm. As I had inſpiſſated juice of wort on board, and could not apply it to a better purpoſe, we uſed it together with melaſſes or ſugar, to make theſe two articles go farther. For of the former I had but one caſk, and of the latter little to ſpare for this brewing. Had I known how well this beer would have ſucceeded, and the great uſe it was of to the people, I ſhould have come better provided. Indeed I was partly diſcouraged by an experiment made during my former voyage; which did not ſucceed then, owing, as I now believe, to ſome miſmanagement.

Any one who is in the leaſt acquainted with ſpruce pines, will find the tree which I have diſtinguiſhed by that name. There are three ſorts of it; that which has the ſmalleſt leaves and deepeſt colour, is the ſort we brewed with, but doubtleſs all three might ſafely ſerve that purpoſe. The tea plant is a ſmall tree or ſhrub, with five white petals, or flower-leaves, ſhaped like thoſe of a roſe, having ſmaller ones



Published Feb.ry 1.st 1777 by Wm. Stadtan in New Street Shoe Lane & Tho.s Cadell in the Strand

ones of the ſame figure in the intermediate ſpaces, and twenty or more filaments or threads. The tree ſometimes grows to a moderate height, and is generally bare on the lower part, with a number of ſmall branches growing cloſe together towards the top. The leaves are ſmall and pointed, like thoſe of the myrtle; it bears a dry roundiſh ſeed caſe, and grows commonly in dry places near the ſhores. The leaves, as I have already obſerved, were uſed by many of us as tea, which has a very agreeable bitter, and flavour, when they are recent, but loſes ſome of both when they are dried. When the infuſion was made ſtrong, it proved emetic to ſome, in the ſame manner as green tea. 1773. May.

The inhabitants of this bay are of the ſame race of people with thoſe in the other parts of this country, ſpeak the ſame language, and obſerve nearly the ſame cuſtoms. Theſe indeed ſeem to have a cuſtom of making preſents before they receive any; in which they come nearer to the Otaheiteans than the reſt of their countrymen. What could induce three or four families (for I believe there are not more) to ſeparate themſelves ſo far from the ſociety of the reſt of their fellow-creatures, is not eaſy to gueſs. By our meeting with inhabitants in this place, it ſeems probable that there are people ſcattered over all this ſouthern iſland. But the many veſtiges of them in different parts of this bay, compared with the number that we actually ſaw, indicates that they live a wandering life; and, if one may judge from appearances and circumſtances, few as they are, they live not in perfect amity one family with another. For, if they did, why do they not form themſelves into ſome ſociety? a thing not only natural to man, but obſerved even by the brute creation.

I ſhall

1773. May. I ſhall conclude this account of Duſky Bay with ſome obſervations made and communicated to me by Mr. Wales. He found, by a great variety of obſervations, that the latitude of his obſervatory at Pickerſgill Harbour, was 45° 47′ 26″ ½ South; and, by the mean of ſeveral diſtances of the moon from the ſun, that its longitude was 166° 18′ Eaſt; which is about half a degree leſs than it is laid down in my chart conſtructed in my former voyage. He found the variation of the needle or compaſs, by the mean of three different needles, to be 13° 49′ Eaſt, and the dip of the South end 70° 5′ ¾. The times of high water on the full and change days, he found to be at 10ʰ 57′, and the tide to riſe and fall at the former eight feet, at the latter five feet eight inches. This difference in the riſe of the tides between the new and full moon is a little extraordinary, and was probably occaſioned at this time by ſome accidental cauſe, ſuch as winds, &c. but, be it as it will, I am well aſſured there was no error in the obſervations.

Suppoſing the longitude of the obſervatory to be as above, the error of Mr. Kendal's watch, in longitude, will be 1° 48′, minus, and that of Mr. Arnold's 39′, 25″. The former was found to be gaining 6″, 461 a-day on mean time, and the latter loſing 99″, 361. Agreeably to theſe rates the longitude by them was to be determined, until an opportunity of trying them again.

I muſt obſerve, that in finding the longitude by Mr. Kendal's watch, we ſuppoſe it to have gone mean time from the Cape of Good Hope. Had its Cape rate been allowed, the error would not have been ſo great.

CHAP.

CHAP. VI.

Paſſage from Duſky Bay to Queen Charlotte's Sound, with an Account of ſome Water Spouts, and of our joining the Adventure.

AFTER leaving Duſky Bay, as hath been already mentioned, I directed my courſe along ſhore for Queen Charlotte's Sound, where I expected to find the Adventure. In this paſſage we met with nothing remarkable or worthy of notice, till the 17th at four o'clock in the afternoon. Being then about three leagues to the weſtward of Cape Stephens, having a gentle gale at Weſt by South, and clear weather, the wind at once flattened to a calm, the ſky became ſuddenly obſcured by dark denſe clouds, and ſeemed to forebode much wind. This occaſioned us to clew up all our ſails, and preſently after ſix water-ſpouts were ſeen. Four roſe and ſpent themſelves between us and the land; that is to the S. W. of us; the fifth was without us; the ſixth firſt appeared in the S. W., at the diſtance of two or three miles at leaſt from us. Its progreſſive motion was to the N. E. not in a ſtraight, but in a crooked line, and paſſed within fifty yards of our ſtern, without our feeling any of its effects. The diameter of the baſe of this ſpout I judged to be about fifty or ſixty feet; that is, the ſea within this ſpace was much agitated, and foamed up to a great height. From this a tube or round body was formed, by which the water, or air, or both, was carried in a ſpiral ſtream up to the clouds. Some of our people ſaid they ſaw a bird in the one

1773. May. Tueſday 11.

Monday 17.

near

1773. May. Monday 17.

near us; which was whirled round like the fly of a jack as it was carried upwards. During the time theſe ſpouts laſted, we had, now and then, light puffs of wind from all points of the compaſs; with ſome few ſlight ſhowers of rain, which generally fell in large drops; and the weather continued thick and hazy, for ſome hours after, with variable light breezes of wind. At length the wind fixed in its old point, and the ſky reſumed its former ſerenity. Some of theſe ſpouts appeared, at times, to be ſtationary: and, at other times, to have a quick, but very unequal, progreſſive motion, and always in a crooked line, ſometimes one way and ſometimes another; ſo that, once or twice, we obſerved them to croſs one another. From the aſcending motion of the bird, and ſeveral other circumſtances, it was very plain to us that theſe ſpouts were cauſed by whirlwinds; and that the water in them was violently hurried upwards, and did not deſcend from the clouds, as I have heard ſome aſſert. The firſt appearance of them is by the violent agitation and riſing up of the water; and, preſently after, you ſee a round column or tube forming from the clouds above, which apparently deſcends till it joins the agitated water below. I ſay apparently, becauſe I believe it not to be ſo in reality, but that the tube is already formed from the agitated water below, and aſcends, though at firſt it is either too ſmall or too thin to be ſeen. When the tube is formed, or becomes viſible, its apparent diameter increaſeth until it is pretty large; after that, it decreaſeth; and, at laſt, it breaks or becomes inviſible towards the lower part. Soon after, the ſea below reſumes its natural ſtate, and the tube is drawn, by little and little, up to the clouds, where it is diſſipated. The ſame tube would ſometimes have a vertical, and ſometimes a crooked or inclined direction. The moſt rational

rational account I have read of water ſpouts is in Mr. Falconer's Marine Dictionary, which is chiefly collected from the philoſophical writings of the ingenious Dr. Franklin. I have been told that the firing of a gun will diſſipate them; and I am very ſorry I did not try the experiment, as we were near enough, and had a gun ready for the purpoſe; but as ſoon as the danger was paſt, I thought no more about it, being too attentive in viewing theſe extraordinary meteors. At the time this happened the barometer ſtood at 29, 75, and the thermometer at 56. 1773. May. Monday 17.

In coming from Cape Farewell to Cape Stephens, I had a better view of the coaſt than I had when I paſſed in my former voyage, and obſerved that, about ſix leagues to the Eaſt of the firſt mentioned cape, is a ſpacious bay, which is covered from the ſea by a low point of land. This is, I believe, the ſame that Captain Taſman anchored in on the 18th of December 1642, and by him called Murderer's Bay, by reaſon of ſome of his men being killed by the natives. Blind Bay, ſo named by me in my former voyage, lies to the S. E. of this, and ſeems to run a long way in-land to the South; the ſight, in this direction, not being bounded by any land. The wind having returned to the Weſt, as already mentioned, we reſumed our courſe to the Eaſt; and at day-light the next morning (being the 18th), we appeared off Queen Charlotte's Sound, where we diſcovered our conſort the Adventure, by the ſignals ſhe made to us; an event which every one felt with an agreeable ſatisfaction. The freſh weſterly wind now died away, and was ſucceeded by light airs from the South and S. W.; ſo that we had to work in, with our boats a-head towing. In the doing of this, we diſcovered a rock, which we did not ſee in my former voy- Tueſday 18.

1773. May. Tueſday 18.

age. It lies in the direction of S. by E. ½ E.; diſtant four miles from the outermoſt of the Two Brothers, and in a line with the White Rocks, on with the middle of Long Iſland. It is juſt even with the ſurface of the ſea, and hath deep water all round it. At noon, Lieutenant Kemp of the Adventure came on board; from whom I learnt that their ſhip had been here about ſix weeks. With the aſſiſtance of a light breeze, our boats, and the tides, we, at ſix o'clock in the evening, got to an anchor in Ship Cove near the Adventure; when Captain Furneaux came on board, and gave me the following account of his proceedings, from the time we parted, to my arrival here.

CHAP.

CHAP. VII.

Captain Furneaux's Narrative, from the Time the two Ships were ſeparated, to their joining again in Queen Charlotte's Sound, with ſome Account of Van Diemen's Land.

ON the 7th of February 1773, in the morning, the Reſolution being then about two miles ahead, the wind ſhifting then to the weſtward, brought on a very thick fog, ſo that we loſt ſight of her. We ſoon after heard a gun, the report of which we imagined to be on the larboard beam; we then hauled up S. E., and kept firing a four pounder every half hour; but had no anſwer, nor further ſight of her; then we kept the courſe we ſteered on before the fog came on. In the evening it began to blow hard, and was, at intervals, more clear; but could ſee nothing of her, which gave us much uneaſineſs. We then tacked and ſtood to the weſtward, to cruize in the place where we laſt ſaw her, according to agreement in caſe of ſeparation; but, next day, came on a very heavy gale of wind and thick weather, that obliged us to bring to, and thereby prevented us reaching the intended ſpot. However, the wind coming more moderate, and the fog in ſome meaſure clearing away, we cruized as near the place as we could get, for three days; when, giving over all hopes of joining company again, we bore away for winter-quarters, diſtant fourteen hundred leagues, through a ſea entirely unknown, and reduced the allowance of water to one quart per day.

1773. February. Sunday 7.

Monday 8.

1773. February. Monday 8. We kept between the latitude of 52 and 53 South; had much weſterly wind, hard gales with ſqualls, ſnow and ſleet, with a long hollow ſea from the S. W., ſo that we judged there is no land in that quarter. After we reached the longitude of 95° Eaſt, we found the variation decreaſe very faſt; but, for a more perfect account, I refer you to the table at the end of this book.

Friday 26. On the 26th at night, we ſaw a meteor of uncommon brightneſs in the N. N. W. It directed its courſe to the S. W., with a very great light in the ſouthern ſky, ſuch as is known to the northward by the name of Aurora Borealis, or Northern Lights. We ſaw the light for ſeveral nights running; and, what is remarkable, we ſaw but one ice iſland after we parted company with the Reſolution, till our making land, though we were moſt of the time two or three degrees to the ſouthward of the latitude we firſt ſaw it in. We were daily attended by great numbers of ſea birds, and frequently ſaw porpoiſes curiouſly ſpotted white and black.

March. Monday 1. On the firſt of March we were alarmed with the cry of land by the man at the maſt head, on the larboard beam; which gave us great joy. We immediately hauled our wind and ſtood for it, but to our mortification were diſappointed in a few hours; for what we took to be land, proved no more than clouds, which diſappeared as we ſailed towards them. We then bore away and directed our courſe toward the land laid down in the charts by the name of Van Diemen's Land, diſcovered by Taſman in 1642, and laid down in the latitude 44° South, and longitude 140° Eaſt, and ſuppoſed to join to New Holland.

On

On the 9th of March, having little wind and pleaſant weather, about nine, A. M. being then in the latitude 43° 37′ South longitude, by lunar obſervation, 145° 36′ Eaſt, and by account 143° 10′ Eaſt, from Greenwich, we ſaw the land bearing N. N. E. about eight or nine leagues diſtance. It appeared moderately high, and uneven near the ſea; the hills further back formed a double land and much higher. There ſeemed to be ſeveral iſlands, or broken land, to the N. W. as the ſhore trenched; but by reaſon of clouds that hung over them, we could not be certain whether they did not join to the main. We hauled immediately up for it, and by noon were within three or four leagues of it. A point, much like the Ramhead, off Plymouth, which I take to be the ſame that Taſman calls South Cape, bore North four leagues off us. The land from this Cape runs directly to the eaſtward; about four leagues along ſhore are three iſlands about two miles long, and ſeveral rocks, reſembling the Mewſtone (particularly one which we ſo named) about four or five leagues E. S. E. ½ E. off the above Cape, which Taſman has not mentioned, or laid down in his Draughts. After you paſs theſe iſlands the land lies E. by N. and W. by S. by the compaſs nearly. It is a bold ſhore, and ſeems to afford ſeveral bays or anchoring-places, but believe deep water. From the S. W. cape, which is in the latitude of 43° 39′ South, and longitude 145° 50′ Eaſt, to the S. E. cape, in the latitude 43° 36′, South, longitude 147° Eaſt, is nearly ſixteen leagues, and ſounding from forty-eight to ſeventy fathoms, ſand and broken ſhells, three or four leagues off ſhore. Here the country is hilly and full of trees, the ſhore rocky and difficult landing, occaſioned by the wind blowing here continually from the weſtward, which occaſions ſuch a ſurf

1773. March. Tueſday 9.

1773. March. a ſurf that the ſand cannot lie on the ſhore. We ſaw no inhabitants here.

Wedneſ. 10. The morning on the 10th of March being calm, the ſhip then about four miles from the land, ſent the great cutter on ſhore with the ſecond lieutenant, to find if there was any harbour or good bay. Soon after, it beginning to blow very hard, made the ſignal for the boat to return, ſeveral times, but they did not ſee or hear any thing of it; the ſhip then three or four leagues off, that we could not ſee any thing of the boat, which gave us great uneaſineſs, as there was a very great ſea. At half paſt one P. M. to our great ſatisfaction, the boat returned on board ſafe. They landed, but with much difficulty, and ſaw ſeveral places where the Indians had been, and one they lately had left, where they had a fire, with a great number of pearl eſcallop ſhells round it, which ſhells they brought on board, with ſome burnt ſticks and green boughs. There was a path from this place, through the woods, which in all probability leads to their habitations; but, by reaſon of the weather, had not time to purſue it. The ſoil ſeems to be very rich; the country well clothed with wood, particularly on the lee ſide of the hills; plenty of water which falls from the rocks in beautiful caſcades for two or three hundred feet perpendicular into the ſea; but they did not ſee the leaſt ſign of any place to anchor in with ſafety. Hoiſted in the boat, and made ſail for Frederick Henry Bay. From noon to three P. M. running along ſhore E. by N. at which time we were abreaſt of the weſternmoſt point of a very deep bay called by Taſman, Stormy Bay. From the Weſt to the Eaſt point of this bay there are ſeveral ſmall iſlands, and black rocks which we called the Fryars. While croſſing this bay

we had very heavy ſqualls and thick weather; at times, when it cleared up, I ſaw ſeveral fires in the bottom of the bay, which is near two or three leagues deep, and has, I doubt not, good places for anchoring, but the weather being ſo bad, did not think it ſafe to ſtand into it. From the Fryars the land trenches away about N. by E. four leagues: We had ſmooth water, and kept in ſhore, having regular ſoundings from twenty to fifteen fathoms water. At half paſt ſix we hauled round a high bluff point, the rocks whereof were like ſo many fluted pillars, and had ten fathoms water, fine ſand, within half a mile of the ſhore. At ſeven, being abreaſt of a fine bay, and having little wind, we came to, with the ſmall bower, in twenty-four fathoms, ſandy bottom. Juſt after we anchored, being a fine clear evening, had a good obſervation of the ſtar Antares and the moon, which gave the longitude of 147° 34′ Eaſt, being in the latitude of 43° 20′ South. We firſt took this bay to be that which Taſman called Frederick Henry Bay; but afterwards found that his is laid down five leagues to the northward of this.

1773. March. Wedneſ. 10.

At day-break the next morning, I ſent the maſter in ſhore to ſound the bay, and to find out a watering-place; at eight he returned, having found a moſt excellent harbour, clear ground from ſide to ſide, from eighteen to five fathom water all over the bay, gradually decreaſing as you go in ſhore. We weighed and turned up into the bay; the wind being weſterly, and very little of it, which baffled us much in getting in. At ſeven o'clock in the evening, we anchored in ſeven fathoms water, with the ſmall bower, and moored with the coaſting anchor to the weſtward, the North point of the bay N. N. E. ½ E. (which we take to be Taſman's Head),

Thurſday 11.

1773. March. Tueſday 20.

Head), and the Eaſtermoſt point (which we named Penguin Iſland, from a curious one we caught there) N. E. by E. $\frac{3}{4}$ E.; the watering-place W. $\frac{1}{2}$ N.; about one mile from the ſhore on each ſide; Maria's Iſland, which is about five or ſix leagues off, ſhut in with both points; ſo that you are quite land-locked in a moſt ſpacious harbour.

We lay here five days, which time was employed in wooding and watering (which is eaſily got), and over-hauling the rigging. We found the country very pleaſant; the ſoil a black, rich, though thin one; the ſides of the hills covered with large trees, and very thick, growing to a great height before they branch off. They are, all of them, of the Evergreen kind, different from any I ever ſaw; the wood is very brittle and eaſily ſplit; there is very little variety of ſorts, having ſeen but two. The leaves of one are long and narrow; and the ſeed (of which I got a few) is in the ſhape of a button, and has a very agreeable ſmell. The leaves of the other are like the bay, and it has a ſeed like the white thorn, with an agreeable ſpicy taſte and ſmell. Out of the trees we cut down for fire-wood, there iſſued ſome gum, which the Surgeon called gum-lac. The trees are moſtly burnt, or ſcorched, near the ground, occaſioned by the natives ſetting fire to the under-wood in the moſt frequented places; and by theſe means they have rendered it eaſy walking. The land birds we ſaw, are a bird like a raven; ſome of the crow kind, black, with the tips of the feathers of the tail and wings white, their bill long and very ſharp; ſome paroquets; and ſeveral kinds of ſmall birds. The ſea-fowl are ducks, teal, and the ſheldrake. I forgot to mention a large white bird, that one of the gentlemen ſhot, about the ſize of a large kite of the eagle kind.

As

As for beaſts, we ſaw but one, which was an *opoſſom*; but we obſerved the dung of ſome, which we judged to be of the deer kind. The fiſh in the bay are ſcarce; thoſe we caught were moſtly ſharks, dog fiſh, and a fiſh called by the ſeamen nurſes, like the dog fiſh, only full of ſmall white ſpots; and ſome ſmall fiſh not unlike ſprats. The Lagoons (which are brackiſh) abound with trout, and ſeveral other ſorts of fiſh, of which we caught a few with lines, but being much encumbered with ſtumps of trees, we could not haul the ſeine. 1773. March. Monday 15.

While we lay here, we ſaw ſeveral ſmokes and large fires, about eight or ten miles in ſhore to the northward, but did not ſee any of the natives; though they frequently come into this bay, as there were ſeveral wigwams or huts, where we found ſome bags and nets made of graſs, in which I imagine they carry their proviſions and other neceſſaries. In one of them there was the ſtone they ſtrike fire with, and tinder made of bark, but of what tree could not be diſtinguiſhed. We found in one of their huts, one of their ſpears, which was made ſharp at one end, I ſuppoſe, with a ſhell or ſtone. Thoſe things we brought away, leaving in the room of them, medals, gun-flints, a few nails, and an old empty barrel with the iron hoops on it. They ſeem to be quite ignorant of every ſort of metal. The boughs, of which their huts are made, are either broken or ſplit, and tied together with graſs in a circular form, the largeſt end ſtuck in the ground, and the ſmaller parts meeting in a point at the top, and covered with fern and bark; ſo poorly done that they will hardly keep out a ſhower of rain. In the middle is the fire-place, ſurrounded with heaps of muſcle, pearl ſcallop, and cray-fiſh ſhells; which I believe

1773. March. Monday 15. to be their chief food, though we could not find any of them. They lie on the ground, on dried graſs, round the fire; and, I believe, they have no ſettled place of habitation (as their houſes ſeemed built only for a few days), but wander about in ſmall parties from place to place in ſearch of food, and are actuated by no other motive. We never found more than three or four huts in a place, capable of containing three or four perſons each only; and what is remarkable, we never ſaw the leaſt marks either of canoe or boat, and it is generally thought they have none; being altogether, from what we could judge, a very ignorant and wretched ſet of people, though natives of a country capable of producing every neceſſary of life, and a climate the fineſt in the world. We found not the leaſt ſigns of any minerals or metals.

Having completed our wood and water, we ſailed from Adventure Bay, intending to coaſt it up along ſhore, till we ſhould fall in with the land ſeen by Captain Cook, and diſcover whether Van Diemen's Land joins with New Hol-
Tueſday 16. land. On the 16th we paſſed Maria's Iſlands, ſo named by Taſman; they appear to be the ſame as the main land. On
Wedneſ. 17. the 17th, having paſſed Schouten's Iſlands, we hauled in for the main land, and ſtood along ſhore at the diſtance of two or three leagues off. The country here appears to be very thickly inhabited, as there was a continual fire along ſhore as we ſailed. The land hereabouts is much pleaſanter, low, and even; but no ſigns of a harbour or bay, where a ſhip might anchor with ſafety. The weather being bad, and blowing hard at S. S. E., we could not ſend a boat on ſhore to have any intercourſe with the inhabitants. In the latitude of 40° 50′ South, the land trenches away to the weſtward, which

West Longitude from Greenwich

215 214 213 212 211 210

38 39 40 41 42 43 44

SKETCH
of
VAN DIEMEN LAND,
Explored By
CAPT.ⁿ FURNEAUX,
in March 1773.

Note. *The Figures annexed to the Ships Track, denote the depth of Water in Fathoms.*

Point Hicks
Discr: 1770.

23 29 33 39 26 20 27 12 7 18

Sisters

FURNEAUX's ISLES

B. of Shoals

C. Barren

Edystone P.

Bay of Fires

S. Helens P.

Low Land

S. Patricks Head

Track of the Adventure

Schoutens Isles

Marias Isles

B. of Fredrick Henry

C. Fredrick Henry

ADVENTURE B.

Here the Land is moderately high Barren & uneven

Cascade

Woody

Fluted Hd

Storm Bs

Fryers

S.W. CAPE

S.E. CAPE

48 75 47

Mewstone

Swilly Isles

145 146 147 148 149 150

East Longitude from Greenwich

J. Russell sculp.t

Published Feb.ry 1.st 1777. by W.m Strahan in New Street Shoe Lane, & Tho.s Cadell in the Strand London.

N° VIII

which I believe forms a deep bay, as we ſaw from the deck ſeveral ſmokes ariſing a-back of the iſlands that lay before it, when we could not ſee the leaſt ſigns of land from the maſt head. 1773. March.

From the latitude of 40° 50′ South, to the latitude of 39° 50′ South, is nothing but iſlands and ſhoals; the land high, rocky, and barren. On the 19th, in the latitude of 40° 30′ South, obſerving breakers about half a mile within ſhore of us, we ſounded, and finding but eight fathoms, immediately hauled off, deepened our water to fifteen fathoms, then bore away, and kept along ſhore again. From the latitude of 39° 50′ to 39° S. we ſaw no land, but had regular ſoundings from fifteen to thirty fathoms. As we ſtood on to the northward, we made land again in about 39°; after which we diſcontinued our northerly courſe, as we found the ground very uneven, and ſhoal-water ſome diſtance off. I think it a very dangerous ſhore to fall in with. Friday 19.

The Coaſt, from Adventure Bay to the place where we ſtood away for New Zealand, lies in the direction S. $\frac{1}{2}$ W. and N. $\frac{1}{2}$ E., about ſeventy-five leagues; and it is my opinion that there is no ſtraits between New Holland and Van Diemen's Land, but a very deep bay. I ſhould have ſtood farther to the northward, but the wind blowing ſtrong at S. S. E., and looking likely to haul round to the eaſtward, which would have blown right on the land, I therefore thought it more proper to leave the coaſt, and ſteer for New Zealand.

After we left Van Diemen's Land, we had very uncertain weather, with rain and very heavy guſts of wind. On the 24th, we were ſurpriſed with a very ſevere ſquall, that reduced us from top-gallant ſails to reefed courſes, in the Wedneſ. 24.

1773. March. Wedneſ. 24. ſpace of an hour. The ſea riſing equally quick, we ſhipped many waves, one of which ſtove the large cutter, and drove the ſmall one from her laſhing into the waiſt; and with much difficulty we ſaved her from being waſhed over-board. This gale laſted twelve hours, after which we had more moderate weather, intermixed with calms. We frequently hoiſted out the boats to try the currents, and in general found a ſmall drift to the W. S. W. We ſhot many birds; and had, upon the whole, good weather; but as we got near to the land, it came on thick and dirty for ſeveral days, till we made the coaſt of New Zealand in 40° 30′ S., having made twenty-four degrees of longitude, from Adventure Bay, after a paſſage of fifteen days.

We had the winds much ſoutherly in this paſſage, and I was under ſome apprehenſions of not being able to fetch the Straits, which would have obliged us to ſteer away for George's Iſland; I would therefore adviſe any who ſail to this part, to keep to the ſouthward; particularly in the fall of the year, when the S. and S. E. winds prevail.

The land, when we firſt made it, appeared high, and formed a confuſed jumble of hills and mountains. We ſteered along ſhore to the northward, but were much retarded in our courſe by reaſon of the ſwell from the N. E.

April. Saturday 3. At noon on the 3d of April, Cape Farewell, which is the South point of the entrance of the Weſt ſide of the Straits, bore E. by N. $\frac{1}{2}$ N. by the compaſs, three or four leagues diſtant. About eight o'clock we entered the Straits, and ſteered N. E. till midnight; then brought to till day-light, and had ſoundings from forty-five to fifty-eight fathoms,

Sunday 4. ſand and broken ſhells. At day-light, made ſail and ſteered S. E. by E.; had light airs; Mount Egmont N. N. E. eleven

or

or twelve leagues, and Point Stephens S. E. ½ E. ſeven leagues. At noon, Mount Egmont N. by E. twelve leagues; Stephens Iſland S. E. five leagues. In the afternoon we put the dredge over-board in ſixty-five fathoms; but caught nothing except a few ſmall ſcallops, two or three oyſters, and broken ſhells. 1773. April. Sunday 4.

Standing to the eaſtward for Charlotte's Sound, with a light breeze at N. W., in the morning on the 5th, Stephens Iſland bearing S. W. by W. four leagues, we were taken aback with a ſtrong eaſterly gale, which obliged us to haul our wind to the S. E., and work to windward up under Point Jackſon. The courſe from Stephens Iſland to Point Jackſon, is nearly S. E. by the compaſs, eleven leagues diſtant, depth of water from forty to thirty-two fathoms, ſandy ground. As we ſtood off and on, we fired ſeveral guns, but ſaw no ſigns of any inhabitants. In the afternoon, at half paſt two o'clock, finding the tide ſet the ſhip to the weſtward, we anchored with the coaſting anchor in thirty-nine fathoms water, muddy ground; Point Jackſon S. E. ½ E., three leagues; the Eaſt point of an inlet (about four leagues to the weſtward of Point Jackſon, and which appears to be a good harbour) S. W. by W. ½ W. At eight P. M. the tide ſlackening, we weighed and made ſail (having while at anchor caught ſeveral fiſh with hook and line), and found the tide to run to the weſtward at the rate of two and a half knots per hour. Standing to the Eaſt, we found no ground at ſeventy fathoms, off Point Jackſon N. N. W., two leagues. At eight the next morning, had the ſound open, but the wind being down it, obliged us to work up under the weſtern ſhore, as the tide ſets up ſtrong there, when it runs down in mid channel. At ten, the tide being done, Monday 5. Tueſday 6.

was

1773. April. Tueſday 6. was obliged to come to with the beſt bower in thirty-eight fathoms, cloſe to ſome white rocks, Point Jackſon bearing N. W. ½ N.; the northernmoſt of the Brothers E. by S.; and the middle of Entry Iſland (which lies on the North ſide of the Straits) N. E. We made 15° 30′ E. variation in the Straits. As we ſailed up the ſound we ſaw the tops of high mountains covered with ſnow, which remains all the year. When the tide ſlackened, we weighed and ſailed up the Wedneſ. 7. Sound; and about five o'clock on the 7th, anchored in Ship Cove, in ten fathoms water, muddy ground, and moored the beſt bower to the N. N. E., and ſmall to S. S. W. In the night, we heard the howling of dogs, and people hallooing on the Eaſt ſhore.

The two following days were employed in clearing a place on Motuara Iſland for erecting our tents for the ſick (having then ſeveral on board much afflicted with the ſcurvy), the ſail-makers and coopers. On the top of the iſland was a poſt erected, by the Endeavour's people, with her name and time of departure on it.

Friday 9. On the 9th, we were viſited by three canoes with about ſixteen of the natives; and to induce them to bring us fiſh and other proviſions, we gave them ſeveral things, with which they ſeemed highly pleaſed. One of our young gentlemen ſeeing ſomething wrapt up in a better manner than common, had the curioſity to examine what it was; and to his great ſurpriſe found it to be the head of a man lately killed. They were very apprehenſive of its being forced from them; and particularly the man who ſeemed moſt intereſted in it, whoſe very fleſh crept on his bones, for fear of being puniſhed by us, as Captain Cook had expreſſed his great abhorrence of this unnatural act. They uſed every method to conceal the head,

head, by ſhifting it from one to another; and by ſigns endeavouring to convince us, that there was no ſuch thing amongſt them, though we had ſeen it but a few minutes before. They then took their leave of us, and went on ſhore. 1773. April. Friday 9.

They frequently mentioned Tupia, which was the name of the native of George's Iſland (or Otaheite), brought here by the Endeavour, and who died at Batavia; and when we told them he was dead, ſome of them ſeemed to be very much concerned, and, as well as we could underſtand them, wanted to know whether we killed him, or if he died a natural death. By theſe queſtions, they are the ſame tribe Captain Cook ſaw. In the afternoon, they returned again with fiſh, and fern roots, which they ſold for nails, and other trifles; though the nails are what they ſet the moſt value on. The man and woman who had the head, did not come off again. Having a catalogue of words in their language, we called ſeveral things by name, which ſurpriſed them greatly. They wanted it much, and offered a great quantity of fiſh for it.

Next morning, they returned again, to the number of fifty or ſixty, with their chief at their head (as we ſuppoſed), in five double canoes. They gave us their implements of war, ſtone hatchets, and clothes, &c. for nails and old bottles, which they put a great value on. A number of the head men came on board us, and it was with ſome difficulty we got them out of the ſhip by fair means; but on the appearance of a muſquet with a fixed bayonet, they all went into their canoes very quickly. We were daily viſited by more or leſs, who brought us fiſh in great plenty for nails, beads, and other trifles, and behaved very peaceably. Saturday &c.

1773. April. Saturday 10. We ſettled the aſtronomer with his inſtruments, and a ſufficient guard, on a ſmall iſland, that is joined to Motuara at low water, called the Hippa, where there was an old fortified town that the natives had forſaken. Their houſes ſerved our people to live in; and, by ſinking them about a foot inſide, we made them very comfortable. Having done this, we ſtruck our tents on the Motuara, and having removed the ſhip farther into the cove, on the Weſt ſhore, moored her for the winter. We then erected our tents near the river or watering-place, and ſent aſhore all the ſpars and lumber off the decks, that they might be caulked; and gave her a winter coat to preſerve the hull and rigging. May. Tueſday 11. On the 11th of May, we felt two ſevere ſhocks of an earthquake, but received no kind of damage. Monday 17. On the 17th we were ſurpriſed by the people firing guns on the Hippa, and having ſent the boat, as ſoon as ſhe opened the ſound, had the pleaſure of ſeeing the Reſolution off the mouth of it. We immediately ſent out the boats to her aſſiſtance to tow her in, it being calm. In the evening ſhe anchored about a mile without us; and next morning weighed and warped within us. Both ſhips felt uncommon joy at our meeting, after an abſence of fourteen weeks.

CHAP.

CHAP. VIII.

Tranſactions in Queen Charlotte's Sound, with ſome Remarks on the Inhabitants.

KNOWING that ſcurvy-graſs, celery, and other vegetables were to be found in this ſound, I went myſelf the morning after my arrival, at day-break, to look for ſome, and returned on board at breakfaſt with a boat load. Being now ſatisfied, that enough was to be got for the crews of both ſhips, I gave orders that they ſhould be boiled, with wheat and portable broth, every morning for breakfaſt; and with peaſe and broth for dinner; knowing from experience, that theſe vegetables, thus dreſſed, are extremely beneficial, in removing all manner of ſcorbutic complaints. 1773. May. Wedneſ. 19.

I have already mentioned a deſire I had of viſiting Van Diemen's Land, in order to inform myſelf if it made a part of New Holland; and I certainly ſhould have done this, had the winds proved favourable. But as Captain Furneaux had, now, in a great meaſure, cleared up that point, I could have no buſineſs there; and therefore came to a reſolution to continue our reſearches to the Eaſt between the latitudes of 41° and 46°. I acquainted Captain Furneaux therewith, and ordered him to get his ſhip in readineſs to put to ſea as ſoon as poſſible.

In the morning of the 20th, I ſent aſhore, to the watering-place near the Adventure's tent, the only ewe and ram remaining, of thoſe which I brought from the Cape of Good Hope with an intent to leave in this country. Soon after I

1773. May. visited the several gardens Captain Furneaux had caused to be made and planted with various articles; all of which were in a flourishing state, and, if attended to by the natives, may
Friday 21. prove of great utility to them. The next day I set some men to work to make a garden on Long Island, which I planted with garden seeds, roots, &c.

Saturday 22. On the 22d in the morning, the ewe and ram, I had with so much care and trouble brought to this place, were both found dead; occasioned, as was supposed, by eating some poisonous plant. Thus my hopes of stocking this country with a breed of sheep, were blasted in a moment. About noon, we were visited, for the first time since I arrived, by some of the natives, who dined with us; and it was not a little they devoured. In the evening, they were dismissed with presents.

Monday 24. Early in the morning of the 24th, I sent Mr. Gilbert the master to sound about the rock we had discovered in the entrance of the sound. Myself, accompanied by Captain Furneaux and Mr. Forster, went in a boat to the West bay on a shooting party. In our way, we met a large canoe in which were fourteen or fifteen people. One of the first questions they asked, was for Tupia, the person I brought from Otaheite on my former voyage; and they seemed to express some concern, when we told them he was dead. These people made the same enquiry of Captain Furneaux when he first arrived; and, on my return to the ship in the evening, I was told that a canoe had been along-side, the people in which seemed to be strangers, and who also enquired for Tupia. Late in the evening Mr. Gilbert returned, having sounded all round the rock, which he found to be very small and steep.

Nothing

Nothing worthy of notice happened till the 29th, when ſeveral of the natives made us a viſit, and brought with them a quantity of fiſh, which they exchanged for nails, &c. One of theſe people I took over to Motuara, and ſhewed him ſome potatoes planted there by Mr. Fannen Maſter of the Adventure. There ſeemed to be no doubt of their ſucceeding; and the man was ſo well pleaſed with them, that he, of his own accord, began to hoe the earth up about the plants. We next took him to the other gardens, and ſhewed him the turnips, carrots, and parſnips; roots which, together with the potatoes, will be of more real uſe to them than all the other articles we had planted. It was eaſy to give them an idea of theſe roots, by comparing them with ſuch as they knew.

1773. May. Saturday 29.

Two or three families of theſe people now took up their abode near us, employing themſelves daily in fiſhing, and ſupplying us with the fruits of their labour; the good effects of which we ſoon felt. For we were, by no means, ſuch expert fiſhers as they are; nor were any of our methods of fiſhing equal to theirs.

On the 2d of June, the ſhips being nearly ready to put to ſea, I ſent on ſhore, on the Eaſt ſide of the ſound, two goats, male and female. The former was ſomething more than a year old; but the latter was much older. She had two fine kids, ſome time before we arrived in Duſky Bay, which were killed by cold, as hath been already mentioned. Captain Furneaux alſo put on ſhore, in Cannibal Cove, a boar and two breeding ſows; ſo that we have reaſon to hope this country will, in time, be ſtocked with theſe animals, if they are not deſtroyed by the natives before they become wild; for, afterwards, they will be in no danger. But as the

June. Wedneſ. 2.

1773. June. Wedneſ. 2. natives knew nothing of their being left behind, it may be ſome time before they are diſcovered.

In our excurſion to the Eaſt, we met with the largeſt ſeal I had ever ſeen. It was ſwimming on the ſurface of the water, and ſuffered us to come near enough to fire at it; but without effect: for, after a chaſe of near an hour, we were obliged to leave it. By the ſize of this animal, it probably was a ſea lioneſs. It certainly bore much reſemblance to the drawing in Lord Anſon's voyage; our ſeeing a ſea lion when we entered this ſound, in my former voyage, increaſeth the probability; and I am of opinion, they have their abode on ſome of the rocks, which lie in the Strait, or off Admiralty Bay.

Thurſday 3. On the 3d, I ſent a boat with the carpenter over to the Eaſt ſide of the ſound, to cut down ſome ſpars which we were in want of. As ſhe was returning, ſhe was chaſed by a large double canoe full of people; but with what intent, is not known. Early the next morning, ſome of our friends brought us a large ſupply of fiſh. One of them agreed to go away with us; but, afterwards, that is when it came to the point, he changed his mind; as did ſome others who had promiſed to go with the Adventure.

Friday 4.

It was even ſaid, that ſome of them offered their children to ſale. I, however, found that this was a miſtake. The report firſt took its riſe on board the Adventure, where they were utter ſtrangers to their language and cuſtoms. It was very common for theſe people to bring their children with them, and preſent them to us, in expectation that we would make them preſents; this happened to me the preceding morning. A man brought his ſon, a boy about nine or ten years of age, and preſented him to me. As the report of

1773. June. Friday 4.

ſelling their children was then current, I thought, at firſt, that he wanted me to buy the boy. But, at laſt, I found that he wanted me to give him a white ſhirt, which I accordingly did. The boy was ſo fond of his new dreſs that he went all over the ſhip, preſenting himſelf before every one that came in his way. This freedom uſed by him offended Old Will the ram goat, who gave him a butt with his horns, and knocked him backward on the deck. Will would have repeated his blow, had not ſome of the people come to the boy's aſſiſtance. The misfortune, however, ſeemed to him irreparable. The ſhirt was dirtied, and he was afraid to appear in the cabbin before his father, until brought in by Mr. Forſter; when he told a very lamentable ſtory againſt Gourey the great dog (for ſo they call all the quadrupeds we had aboard), nor could he be reconciled, till his ſhirt was waſhed and dried. This ſtory, though extremely trifling in itſelf, will ſhew how liable we are to miſtake theſe people's meaning, and to aſcribe to them cuſtoms they never knew even in thought.

About nine o'clock, a large double canoe, in which were twenty or thirty people, appeared in ſight. Our friends on board ſeemed much alarmed, telling us that theſe were their enemies. Two of them, the one with a ſpear, and the other with a ſtone hatchet in his hand, mounted the arm cheſts on the poop, and there, in a kind of bravado, bid thoſe enemies defiance; while the others, who were on board, took to their canoe and went a-ſhore, probably to ſecure the women and children.

All I could do, I could not prevail on the two that remained to call theſe ſtrangers along-ſide; on the contrary, they were diſpleaſed at my doing it, and wanted me to fire upon them.

1773. June. them. The people in the canoe ſeemed to pay very little regard to thoſe on board, but kept advancing ſlowly towards the ſhip, and, after performing the uſual ceremonies, put along-ſide. After this the chief was eaſily prevailed upon to come on board, followed by many others, and peace was immediately eſtabliſhed on all ſides. Indeed, it did not appear to me that theſe people had any intention to make war upon their brethren. At leaſt, if they had, they were ſenſible enough to know, that this was neither the time nor place for them to commit hoſtilities.

One of the firſt queſtions theſe ſtrangers aſked, was for Tupia; and when I told them he was dead, one or two expreſſed their ſorrow by a kind of lamentation, which to me appeared more formal than real. A trade ſoon commenced between our people and them. It was not poſſible to hinder the former from ſelling the cloaths from off their backs for the mereſt trifles, things that were neither uſeful nor curious. This cauſed me to diſmiſs the ſtrangers ſooner than I would have done. When they departed, they went over to Motuara, where, by the help of our glaſſes, we diſcovered four or five canoes, and ſeveral people on the ſhore. This induced me to go over in my boat, accompanied by Mr. Forſter and one of the officers. We were well received by the chief and the whole tribe, which conſiſted of between ninety and a hundred perſons, men, women, and children, having with them ſix canoes, and all their utenſils; which made it probable that they were come to reſide in this ſound. But this is only conjecture: for it is very common for them, when they even go but a little way, to carry their whole property with them; every place being alike, if it affords them the neceſſary ſubſiſtence; ſo that it can hardly be ſaid they

they are ever from home. Thus we may eaſily account for the emigration of thoſe few families we found in Duſky Bay. 1773. June.

Living thus diſperſed in ſmall parties, knowing no head but the chief of the family or tribe, whoſe authority may be very little, they feel many inconveniencies, to which well-regulated ſocieties, united under one head or any other form of government, are not ſubject. Theſe form laws and regulations for their general good; they are not alarmed at the appearance of every ſtranger; and, if attacked or invaded by a public enemy, have ſtrong holds to retire to, where they can, with advantage, defend themſelves, their property, and their country. This ſeems to be the ſtate of moſt of the inhabitants of Eahei-nomauwe; whereas thoſe of Tavai-poenammoo, by living a wandering life in ſmall parties, are deſtitute of moſt of theſe advantages, which ſubjects them to perpetual alarms. We generally found them upon their guard, travelling and working, as it were, with their arms in their hands. Even the women are not exempted from bearing arms, as appeared by the firſt interview I had with the family in Duſky Bay; where each of the two women was armed with a ſpear, not leſs than 18 feet in length.

I was led into theſe reflections, by not being able to recollect the face of any one perſon I had ſeen here three years ago. Nor did it once appear, that any one of them had the leaſt knowledge of me, or of any perſon with me that was here at that time. It is, therefore, highly probable, that the greateſt part of the people which inhabited this found in the beginning of the year 1770, have been ſince driven out of it, or have, of their own accord, removed

1773. June. Friday 4. ſomewhere elſe. Certain it is, that not one third of the inhabitants were here now, that were then. Their ſtrong hold on the point of Motuara hath been long deſerted; and we found many forſaken habitations in all parts of the ſound. We are not, however, wholly to infer from this, that this place hath been once very populous; for each family may, for their own convenience, when they move from place to place, have more huts than one or two.

It may be aſked, if theſe people had never ſeen the Endeavour, nor any of her crew, how could they become acquainted with the name of Tupia, or have in their poſſeſſion (which many of them had) ſuch articles, as they could only have got from that ſhip? To this it may be anſwered, that the name of Tupia was ſo popular among them when the Endeavour was here, that it would be no wonder if, at this time, it was known over great part of New *Z*ealand, and as familiar to thoſe who never ſaw him, as to thoſe who did. Had ſhips, of any other nation whatever, arrived here, they would have equally enquired of them for Tupia. By the ſame way of reaſoning, many of the articles left here by the Endeavour, may be now in poſſeſſion of thoſe who never ſaw her. I got from one of the people, now preſent, an ear ornament, made of glaſs very well formed and poliſhed. The glaſs they muſt have got from the Endeavour.

After paſſing about an hour on Motuara with theſe people, and having diſtributed among them ſome preſents, and ſhewed to the chief the gardens we had made, I returned on board, and ſpent the remainder of our Royal Maſter's birth-day in feſtivity; having the company of Captain Furneaux and all his officers. Double allowance enabled the ſeamen to ſhare in the general joy.

Both

Both ſhips being now ready for ſea, I gave Captain Furneaux an account in writing of the route I intended to take; which was to proceed to the Eaſt, between the latitudes of 41° and 46° South, until I arrived in the longitude of 140° or 135° Weſt; then, provided no land was diſcovered, to proceed to Otaheite; from thence back to this place, by the ſhorteſt route; and after taking in wood and water, to proceed to the South, and explore all the unknown parts of the ſea between the meridian of New Zealand and Cape Horn. Therefore, in caſe of ſeparation before we reached Otaheite, I appointed that iſland for the place of rendezvous, where he was to wait till the 20th of Auguſt: if not joined by me before that time, he was then to make the beſt of his way back to Queen Charlotte's Sound, where he was to wait until the 20th of November: After which (if not joined by me) he was to put to ſea, and carry into execution their Lordſhips inſtructions. 1773. June.

Some may think it an extraordinary ſtep in me to proceed on diſcoveries as far South as 46 degrees of latitude, in the very depth of winter. But though it muſt be owned, that winter is by no means favourable for diſcoveries, it nevertheleſs appeared to me neceſſary that ſomething ſhould be done in it, in order to leſſen the work I was upon; leſt I ſhould not be able to finiſh the diſcovery of the ſouthern part of the South Pacific Ocean the enſuing ſummer. Beſides, if I ſhould diſcover any land in my route to the Eaſt, I ſhould be ready to begin, with the ſummer, to explore it. Setting aſide all theſe conſiderations, I had little to fear; having two good ſhips well provided, and healthy crews. Where then could I ſpend my time better? If I did nothing more, I was at leaſt in hopes of being able to point out

1773. June. to poſterity, that theſe ſeas may be navigated, and that it is practicable to go on diſcoveries, even in the very depth of winter.

During our ſtay in the Sound, I had obſerved that this ſecond viſit made to this country, had not mended the morals of the natives of either ſex. I had always looked upon the females of New Zealand to be more chaſte than the generality of Indian women. Whatever favours a few of them might have granted to the people in the Endeavour, it was generally done in a private manner, and the men did not ſeem to intereſt themſelves much in it. But now, I was told, they were the chief promoters of a ſhameful traffic, and that, for a ſpike-nail, or any other thing they value, they would oblige the women to proſtitute themſelves, whether they would or no; and even without any regard to that privacy, which decency required.

During our ſtay here, Mr. Wales loſt no opportunity to obſerve equal altitudes of the ſun, for obtaining the rates of the watches. The reſult of his labours proved that Mr. Kendal's, was gaining 9″, 5 per day, and Mr. Arnold's, loſing 94″, 158 per day, on mean time.

CHAP.

CHAP. IX.

Route from New Zealand to Otaheite, with an Account of ſome low Iſlands, ſuppoſed to be the ſame that were ſeen by M. de Bougainville.

ON the 7th of June, at four in the morning, the wind being more favourable, we unmoored, and at ſeven weighed and put to ſea, with the Adventure in company. We had no ſooner got out of the Sound, than we found the wind at South; ſo that we had to ply through the Straits. About noon the tide of ebb ſetting out in our favour, made our boards advantageous; ſo that, at five o'clock in the evening, Cape Palliſer, on the Iſland of Eahei-nomauwe, bore S. S. E. $\frac{1}{2}$ S. and Cape Koamaroo, or the S. E. point of the Sound, N. by W. $\frac{3}{4}$ W.; preſently after it fell calm; and the tide of flood now making againſt us, carried us, at a great rate, back to the North. A little before high-water, the calm was ſucceeded by a breeze from the North, which ſoon increaſed to a briſk gale. This, together with the ebb, carried us, by eight o'clock the next morning, quite through the Strait. Cape Palliſer at this time bore E. N. E. and at noon N. by W. diſtant ſeven leagues.

1773. June. Monday 7.

Tueſday 8.

This day at noon, when we attended the winding up of the watches, the fuſee of Mr. Arnold's would not turn round; ſo that, after ſeveral unſucceſsful trials, we were obliged to let it go down.

After getting clear of the Straits, I directed my courſe S. E. by E. having a gentle gale, but variable, between the

1773. June. Tueſday 8. North and Weſt. The late S. E. winds having cauſed a ſwell from the ſame quarter, which did not go down for ſome days, we had little hopes of meeting with land in that direction. We, however, continued to ſteer to the S. E., and on

Friday 11. the 11th, croſſed the meridian of 180°, and got into the Weſt longitude, according to my way of reckoning.

Wedneſ. 16. On the 16th, at ſeven in the morning, the wind having veered round to S. E., we tacked and ſtretched to N. E.; being, at this time, in the latitude of 47° 7′, longitude 173° Weſt. In this ſituation we had a great ſwell from N. E.

The wind continued at S. E. and S. S. E., blew freſh at intervals; and was attended with ſometimes fair, and at

Sunday 20. other times rainy weather, till the 20th; on which day, being in the latitude of 44° 30′, longitude 165° 45′ Weſt, the wind ſhifted to the Weſt, blew a gentle gale, and was attended with fair weather. With this we ſteered E. by N., E.

Wedneſ. 23. by S., and E., till the 23d at noon, when, being in the latitude of 44° 38′ South, longitude 161° 27′ Weſt, we had a few hours calm. The calm was ſucceeded by a wind at Eaſt, with which we ſtood to the North. The wind increaſed and blew in ſqualls, attended with rain, which at laſt brought

Thurſday 24. us under our courſes; and at two o'clock in the afternoon of the next day, we were obliged to lie to, under the foreſail; having a very hard gale from E. N. E., and a great ſea from the ſame direction.

Friday 25. At ſeven o'clock in the morning of the 25th, the gale being more moderate, we made ſail under the courſes, and in the afternoon ſet the top-ſails cloſe-reefed. At midnight, the wind having veered more to the North, we tacked and ſtretched to the S. E.; being, at this time, in the latitude of 42° 53′ South, longitude 163° 20′ Weſt.

We

We continued to ſtretch to the S. E., with a freſh gale and fair weather, till four o'clock in the afternoon the next day, when we ſtood again to the N. E., till midnight between the 27th and 28th. Then we had a few hours calm; which was ſucceeded by faint breezes from the Weſt. At this time we were in the latitude of 42° 32′ longitude 161° 15′ Weſt. The wind remained not long at Weſt, before it veered back to the Eaſt by the North, and kept between the S. E. and N. E.; but never blew ſtrong. 1773. June. Saturday 26.

On July 2d, being in the latitude of 43° 3′, longitude 156° 17′ Weſt, we had again a calm, which brought the wind back to the Weſt; but it was of no longer continuance than before. For, the next day, it returned to the E. and S. E., blew freſh at times, and by ſqualls, with rain. July. Friday 2. Saturday 3.

On the 7th, being in the latitude of 41° 22′, longitude 150° 12′ Weſt, we had two hours calm; in which time Mr. Wales went on board the Adventure to compare the watches; and they were found to agree, allowing for the difference of their rates of going: a probable, if not a certain proof, that they had gone well ſince we had been in this ſea. Wedneſ. 7.

The calm was ſucceeded by a wind from the South; between which point and the N. W., it continued for the ſix ſucceeding days, but never blew ſtrong. It was, however, attended with a great hollow ſwell from S. W. and Weſt; a ſure indication that no large land was near in thoſe directions. We now ſteered Eaſt inclining to the South, and on the 10th, in the latitude of 43° 39′, longitude 144° 43′ Weſt, the variation was found, by ſeveral azimuths, to be no more than 3° E.; but the next morning, it was found to be 4° 5′ 30″; and, in the afternoon, 5° 56′ E. The ſame day, at noon, we were in the latitude of 43° 44′, longitude 141° 56′ Weſt. Saturday 10. Sunday 11.

At

1773. July. Monday 12. At nine o'clock in the morning of the 12th, the longitude was obſerved as follows, viz.

Self - -	1ſt ſet - - -	139°	47′ 15″
Ditto - -	2d ſet - -	140	7 30
Mr. Wales	1ſt ſet - - -	141	22 15
Mr. Wales	2d ſet - -	140	10 0
Mr. Clerke	- - - -	140	56 45
Mr. Gilbert	- - -	140	2 0
Mean	- - - -	140	24 17½ Weſt.

Tueſday 13. This differed from my reckoning only 2°½. The next morning, in the latitude of 43° 3′, longitude 139° 20′ Weſt, we had ſeveral lunar obſervations, which were conſonant to thoſe made the day before, allowing for the ſhip's run in the time. In the afternoon, we had, for a few hours, variable light airs next to a calm; after which we got a wind from the N. E., blowing freſh and in ſqualls, attended with dark gloomy weather, and ſome rain.

Wedneſ. 14. We ſtretched to the S. E. till five o'clock in the afternoon on the 14th; at which time, being in the latitude of 43° 15′, longitude 137° 39′ Weſt, we tacked and ſtood to the North under our courſes; having a very hard gale with heavy
Thurſday 15. ſqualls, attended with rain, till near noon the next day, when it ended in a calm. At this time we were in the latitude of 42° 39′, longitude 137° 58′ Weſt. In the evening, the calm was ſucceeded by a breeze from S. W., which ſoon after increaſed to a freſh gale; and fixing at S. S. W., with it we ſteered N. E. ½ E. In the latitude of 41° 25′, longitude 135° 58′ Weſt; we ſaw floating in the ſea a billet of wood, which ſeemed to be covered with barnacles; ſo that there was no judging, how long it might have been there, or from whence or how far it had come.

We

We continued to ſteer N. E. ½ E., before a very ſtrong gale which blew in ſqualls, attended with ſhowers of rain and hail, and a very high ſea from the ſame quarter, till noon, on the 17th. Being then in the latitude of 39° 44′, longitude 133° 32′ Weſt, which was a degree and a half farther Eaſt than I had intended to run; nearly in the middle between my track to the North in 1769, and the return to the South in the ſame year (as will appear by the chart), and ſeeing no ſigns of land, I ſteered North-eaſterly, with a view of exploring that part of the ſea lying between the two tracks juſt mentioned, down as low as the latitude of 27°, a ſpace that had not been viſited by any preceding navigator that I knew of.

1773. July. Thurſday 15. Saturday 17.

On the 19th, being in the latitude of 36° 34′, longitude 133° 7′ Weſt, we ſteered N. ½ Weſt, having ſtill the advantage of a hard gale at South, which the next day veered to S. E. and E., blew hard and by ſqualls, attended with rain and thick hazy weather. This continued till the evening of the 21ſt, when the gale abated, the weather cleared up, and the wind backed to the S. and S. E.

Monday 19. Tueſday 20. Wedneſ. 21.

We were now in the latitude of 32° 30′, longitude 133° 40′ Weſt; from this ſituation we ſteered N. N. W., till noon the next day, when we ſteered a point more to the Weſt; being at this time in the latitude of 31° 6′, longitude 134° 12′ Weſt. The weather was now ſo warm, that it was neceſſary to put on lighter clothes: the mercury in the thermometer at noon roſe to 63. It had never been lower than 46, and ſeldom higher than 54, at the ſame time of the day, ſince we left New Zealand.

Thurſday 22.

This day was remarkable by our not ſeeing a ſingle bird. Not one had paſſed, ſince we left the land, without ſeeing

1773. July. Thurſday 22. ſome of the following birds, viz. albatroſſes, ſheerwaters, pintadoes, blue peterels, and Port Egmont hens. But theſe frequent every part of the Southern Ocean in the higher latitudes: not a bird, nor any other thing, was ſeen, that could induce us to think that we had ever been in the neighbourhood of any land.

The wind kept veering round from the South by the Weſt to N. N. W., with which we ſtretched North till noon the next day, when, being in the latitude of 29° 22′, we tacked and ſtretched to the weſtward. The wind ſoon increaſed to a very hard gale, attended with rain, and blew in ſuch heavy ſqualls, as to ſplit the moſt of our ſails. This weather con-
Sunday 25. tinued till the morning of the 25th, when the wind became more moderate, and veered to N. W. and W. N. W., with which we ſteered and ſtretched to N. E., being, at that time, in the latitude of 29° 51′ longitude 136° 28′ Weſt. In the afternoon, the ſky cleared up, and the weather became fair and ſettled. We now met the firſt tropic bird we had ſeen in this ſea.

Monday 26. On the 26th, in the afternoon, being in the latitude of 28° 44′, we had ſeveral obſervations of the ſun and moon, which gave the longitude 135° 30′ Weſt. My reckoning at the ſame time was 135° 27′, and I had no occaſion to correct it ſince I left the land. We continued to ſtretch to the North, with
Tueſday 27. light breezes from the weſtward, till noon the next day, when we were ſtopped by a calm; our latitude at this time, being 27° 53′, longitude 135° 17′ Weſt. In the evening, the calm was ſucceeded by a breeze from the N. and N. W., with which we plyed to the North.

Thurſday 29. On the 29th, I ſent on board the Adventure to enquire into the ſtate of her crew, having heard that they were ſickly;

ſickly; and this I now found was but too true. Her cook was dead, and about twenty of her beſt men were down in the ſcurvy and flux. At this time, *we* had only three men on the ſick liſt, and only one of them attacked with the ſcurvy. Several more, however, began to ſhew ſymptoms of it, and were, accordingly, put upon the wort, marmalade of carrots, rob of lemons and oranges. 1773. July.

I know not how to account for the ſcurvy raging more in the one ſhip than the other; unleſs it was owing to the crew of the Adventure being more ſcorbutic when they arrived in New Zealand than we were, and to their eating few or no vegetables while they lay in Queen Charlotte's Sound, partly for want of knowing the right ſorts, and partly becauſe it was a new diet, which alone was ſufficient for ſeamen to reject it. To introduce any new article of food among ſeamen, let it be ever ſo much for their good, requires both the example and authority of a commander; without both of which, it will be dropt before the people are ſenſible of the benefits reſulting from it. Were it neceſſary, I could name fifty inſtances in ſupport of this remark. Many of my people, officers as well as ſeamen, at firſt diſliked celery, ſcurvy-graſs, &c. being boiled in the peas and wheat; and ſome refuſed to eat it. But, as this had no effect on my conduct, this obſtinate kind of prejudice by little and little wore off; they began to like it as well as the others; and now, I believe, there was hardly a man in the ſhip that did not attribute our being ſo free from the ſcurvy, to the beer and vegetables we made uſe of at New Zealand. After this, I ſeldom found it neceſſary to order any of my people to gather vegetables, whenever we came where any were to be got, and if ſcarce, happy was

1773. July. he who could lay hold on them firſt. I appointed one of my ſeamen to be cook of the Adventure, and wrote to Captain Furneaux, deſiring him to make uſe of every method in his power to ſtop the ſpreading of the diſeaſe amongſt his people, and propoſing ſuch as I thought might tend towards it. But I afterwards found all this unneceſſary, as every method had been uſed they could think of.

Auguſt. Sunday 1. The wind continued in the N. W. quarter, and blew freſh, at times, attended with rain; with which we ſtood to the N. E. On the 1ſt of Auguſt, at noon, we were in the latitude of 25° 1′, longitude 134° 6′, Weſt, and had a great hollow ſwell from N. W. The ſituation we were now in, was nearly the ſame that Captain Carteret aſſigns for Pitcairn's Iſland, diſcovered by him in 1767. We therefore looked well out for it; but ſaw nothing. According to the longitude in which he has placed it, we muſt have paſſed about fifteen leagues to the Weſt of it. But as this was uncertain, I did not think it prudent, conſidering the ſituation of the Adventure's people, to loſe any time in looking for it. A ſight of it would, however, have been of uſe in verifying, or correcting, not only the longitude of this iſle, but of the others that Captain Carteret diſcovered in this neighbourhood; his longitude not being confirmed, I think, by aſtronomical obſervations, and therefore liable to errors, which he could have no method to correct.

As we had now got to the northward of Captain Carteret's tracks, all hopes of diſcovering a continent vaniſhed. Iſlands were all we were to expect to find, until we returned again to the South. I had now, that is on this and my former voyage, croſſed this ocean in the latitude of 40° and upwards, without meeting any thing that did, in

the leaſt, induce me to think I ſhould find what I was in ſearch after. On the contrary, every thing conſpired to make me believe there is no ſouthern continent, between the meridian of America and New Zealand; at leaſt, this paſſage did not produce any indubitable ſigns of any, as will appear by the following remarks. After leaving the coaſts of New Zealand, we daily ſaw, floating in the ſea, rock-weed, for the ſpace of 18° of longitude. In my paſſage to New Zealand in 1769, we alſo ſaw of this weed, for the ſpace of 12° or 14° of longitude before we made the land. The weed is, undoubtedly, the produce of New Zealand; becauſe, the nearer the coaſt, the greater quantity you ſee. At the greateſt diſtance from the coaſt, we ſaw it only in ſmall pieces, generally more rotten, and covered with barnacles: an indubitable ſign that it had been long at ſea. Were it not for this, one might be led to conjecture that ſome other large land lay in the neighbourhood; for it cannot be a ſmall extent of coaſt to produce ſuch a quantity of weed, as to cover ſo large a ſpace of ſea. It hath been already mentioned, that we were no ſooner clear of the Straits, than we met with a large hollow ſwell from the S. E., which continued till we arrived in the longitude of 177° Weſt, and latitude 46°. There we had large billows from the North and N. E. for five days ſucceſſively, and until we got 5° of longitude more to the Eaſt, although the wind, great part of the time, blew from different directions. This was a ſtrong indication that there was no land between us and my track to the Weſt in 1769. After this, we had, as is uſual in all great oceans, large billows from every direction in which the wind blew a freſh gale, but more eſpecially from the S. W. Theſe billows never ceaſed with the cauſe that firſt put them in motion; a ſure indication,

1773. August.

1773. August. that we were not near any large land, and that there is no continent to the South, unleſs in a very high latitude. But this was too important a point to be left to opinions and conjectures. Facts were to determine it; and theſe could only be obtained by viſiting the ſouthern parts; which was to be the work of the enſuing ſummer, agreeably to the plan I had laid down.

As the winds continued to blow from the N. W. and Weſt, we had no other choice but to ſtand to the North, inclining more or leſs every day to the Eaſt. In the latitude of 21°, Friday 6. we ſaw flying fiſh, gannets and egg-birds. On the ſixth, I hoiſted a boat out and ſent for Captain Furneaux to dinner; from whom I learnt that his people were much better, the flux having left them; and the ſcurvy was at a ſtand. Some cyder which he happened to have, and which he gave to the ſcorbutic people, contributed not a little to this happy change. The weather to-day was cloudy, and the wind very unſettled. This ſeemed to announce the approach of the ſo much wiſhed-for trade-wind; which, at eight o'clock in the evening, after two hours calm and ſome heavy ſhowers of rain, we actually got at S. E. We were, at this time, in the latitude of 19° 36′ South, longitude 131° 32′ Weſt. The not meeting with the S. E. trade-wind ſooner, is no new thing in this ſea. As we had now got it, I directed my courſe to the W. N. W., as well to keep in the ſtrength of it, as to get to the North of the iſlands diſcovered in my former voyage; that, if any other iſlands lay in the way, I might have a chance to diſcover them. During the day-time we made all the ſail we could; but, in the night, either run an eaſy ſail, or lay to. We daily ſaw flying fiſh, albacores, dolphins, &c.; but neither by ſtriking, nor with hook

hook and line, could we catch any of them. This required ſome art which none of my people were maſters of. 1773. Auguſt.

On the 11th at day-break, land was ſeen to the South. This, upon a nearer approach, we found to be an iſland of about two leagues in extent, in the direction of N. W. and S. E., and clothed with wood, above which the cocoa-nut trees ſhewed their lofty heads. I judged it to be one of thoſe iſles diſcovered by Mr. Bougainville. It lies in the latitude of 17° 24′, longitude 141° 39′ Weſt; and I called it after the name of the ſhip, Reſolution Iſland. The ſickly ſtate of the Adventure's crew made it neceſſary for me to make the beſt of my way to Otaheite, where I was ſure of finding refreſhments. Conſequently, I did not wait to examine this iſland, which appeared too ſmall to ſupply our wants, but continued our courſe to the Weſt; and, at ſix o'clock in the evening, land was ſeen from the maſt-head, bearing weſt by ſouth. Probably this was another of Bougainville's diſcoveries. I named it Doubtful Iſland; and it lies in the latitude of 17° 20′, longitude 141° 38′ W. I was ſorry I could not ſpare time to haul to the North of Mr. Bougainville's track; but the getting to a place where we could procure refreſhments was more an object at this time than diſcovery. Wedneſ. 11.

During the night we ſteered W. by N., in order to paſs the North of the iſland above mentioned. At day-break the next morning, we diſcovered land right a-head, diſtant about two miles; ſo that day-light adviſed us of our danger but juſt in time. This proved another of theſe low or half-drowned iſlands, or rather a large coral ſhoal of about twenty leagues in circuit. A very ſmall part of it was land, which conſiſted of little iſlots ranged along the north ſide, Thurſday 12.

and

1773. August. Thurſday 12. and connected by ſand-banks and breakers. Theſe iſlots were clothed with wood, among which the cocoa-nut trees were only diſtinguiſhable. We ranged the ſouth ſide of this iſle or ſhoal at the diſtance of one or two miles from the coral bank, againſt which the ſea broke in a dreadful ſurf. In the middle is a large lake or inland ſea, in which was a canoe under ſail.

This iſland, which I named after Captain Furneaux, lies in the latitude 17° 5′, longitude 143° 16′ Weſt. The ſituation is nearly the ſame that is aſſigned for one of thoſe diſcovered by Bougainville. I muſt here obſerve, that amongſt theſe low and half-drowned iſles (which are numerous in this part of the ocean) Mr. Bougainville's diſcoveries cannot be known to that degree of accuracy which is neceſſary to diſtinguiſh them from others. We were obliged to have recourſe to his chart for the latitudes and longitudes of the iſles he diſcovered, as neither the one nor the other is mentioned in his narrative. Without waiting to examine this iſland we continued to ſteer to the Weſt, all ſails ſet, till ſix o'clock in the evening, when we ſhortened ſail to three top-ſails, and at nine brought to.

Friday 13. The next morning at four A. M. we made ſail, and at day-break ſaw another of theſe low iſlands, ſituated in the latitude of 17° 4′, longitude 144° 30′ Weſt, which obtained the name of Adventure Iſland. M. de Bougainville very properly calls this cluſter of low overflowed iſles the Dangerous Archipelago. The ſmoothneſs of the ſea ſufficiently convinced us that we were ſurrounded by them, and how neceſſary it was to proceed with the utmoſt caution, eſpecially in the night.

At

At five o'clock P. M. we again ſaw land, bearing S. W. by S., which we afterwards found to be Chain Iſland, diſcovered in my former voyage. But as I was not ſure of it at this time, and being deſirous of avoiding the delay which lying by in the night occaſioned, I hoiſted out the cutter and manned her with an officer and ſeven men, with orders to keep as far a-head of the ſhips, with a light at her maſt-head, as a ſignal could be diſtinguiſhed, which ſhe was to make in caſe ſhe met with any danger. In this manner we continued to run all night; and, at ſix o'clock the next morning, I called her on board and hoiſted her in. For it did not appear ſhe would be wanted again for this purpoſe, as we had now a large ſwell from the South, a ſure ſign that we were clear of the low iſlands; therefore I ſteered for Otaheite without being apprehenſive of meeting with any danger.

1773. Auguſt.

Saturday 14.

CHAP.

CHAP. X.

The Arrival of the Ships at Otaheite, with an Account of the critical Situation they were in, and of ſeveral Incidents that happened while they lay in Oaiti-piha Bay.

1773. Auguſt. Sunday 15. ON the 15th, at five o'clock in the morning, we ſaw Oſnaburg Iſland, or Maitea, diſcovered by Captain Wallis, bearing S. by W. ½ W. Soon after I brought to, and waited for the Adventure to come up with us, to acquaint Captain Furneaux, that it was my intention to put into Oaiti-piha Bay, near the S. E. end of Otaheite, in order to get what refreſhments we could from that part of the iſland, before we went down to Matavai. This done, we made ſail, and at ſix in the evening ſaw the iſland bearing Weſt. We continued to ſtand on till midnight, when we brought to, till four o'clock in the morning; and then made ſail in for the land with a fine breeze at Eaſt.

Monday 16. At day-break, we found ourſelves not more than half a league from the reef. The breeze now began to fail us, and at laſt fell to a calm. This made it neceſſary to hoiſt out our boats to tow the ſhips off; but all their efforts were not ſufficient to keep them from being carried near the reef. A number of the inhabitants came off in canoes from different parts, bringing with them a little fiſh, a few cocoa-nuts, and other fruits, which they exchanged for nails, beads, &c. The moſt of them knew me again; and many enquired for Mr. Banks and others who were with me before; but not one aſked for Tupia. As the calm continued, our ſituation became

came ſtill more dangerous. We were, however, not without hopes of getting round the weſtern point of the reef and into the bay, till about two o'clock in the afternoon, when we came before an opening or break in the reef, through which I hoped to get with the ſhips. But on ſending to examine it, I found there was not a ſufficient depth of water; though it cauſed ſuch an indraught of the tide of flood, through it, as was very near proving fatal to the Reſolution; for as ſoon as the ſhips got into this ſtream, they were carried with great impetuoſity towards the reef. The moment I perceived this, I ordered one of the warping machines, which we had in readineſs, to be carried out with about four hundred fathoms of rope; but it had not the leaſt effect. The horrors of ſhipwreck now ſtared us in the face. We were not more than two cables length from the breakers; and yet we could find no bottom to anchor, the only probable means we had left to ſave the ſhips. We, however, dropped an anchor; but, before it took hold, and brought us up, the ſhip was in leſs than three fathoms water, and ſtruck at every fall of the ſea, which broke cloſe under our ſtern in a dreadful ſurf, and threatened us every moment with ſhipwreck. The Adventure, very luckily, brought up cloſe upon our bow without ſtriking.

1773. Auguſt. Monday 16.

We preſently carried out two kedge anchors, with hawſers to each. Theſe found ground a little without the bower, but in what depth we never knew. By heaving upon them, and cutting away the bower anchor, we got the ſhip a-float, where we lay ſome time in the greateſt anxiety, expecting every minute that either the kedges would come home, or the hawſers be cut in two by the rocks. At length the tide ceaſed to act in the ſame direction. I ordered all the boats to try to tow off the Reſolution; and when I ſaw this was

1773. August. Monday 16. practicable, we hove up the two kedges. At that moment, a light air came off from the land, which ſo much aſſiſted the boats, that we ſoon got clear of all danger. Then I ordered all the boats to aſſiſt the Adventure; but before they reached her, ſhe was under ſail with the land breeze, and ſoon after joined us, leaving behind her three anchors, her coaſting cable, and two hawſers, which were never recovered. Thus we were once more ſafe at ſea, after narrowly eſcaping being wrecked on the very iſland we, but a few days before, ſo ardently wiſhed to be at. The calm, after bringing us into this dangerous ſituation, very fortunately continued. For had the ſea breeze, as is uſual, ſet in, the Reſolution muſt inevitably have been loſt, and probably the Adventure too.

During the time we were in this critical ſituation, a number of the natives were on board and about the ſhips. They ſeemed to be inſenſible of our danger, ſhewing not the leaſt ſurpriſe, joy, or fear, when we were ſtriking, and left us a little before ſun-ſet, quite unconcerned.

We ſpent the night, which proved ſqually and rainy, making ſhort boards; and the next morning, being the 17th, we anchored in Oaiti-piha Bay in twelve fathoms water, about two cables length from the ſhore; both ſhips being by this time crowded with a great number of the natives, who brought with them cocoa-nuts, plantains, bananoes, apples, yams, and other roots, which they exchanged for nails and beads. To ſeveral who called themſelves chiefs, I made preſents of ſhirts, axes, and ſeveral other articles; and, in return, they promiſed to bring me hogs and fowls: a promiſe they never did, nor ever intended, to perform.

Tueſday 17.

In

In the afternoon I landed, in company with Captain Furneaux, in order to view the watering-place, and to found the diſpoſition of the natives. I alſo ſent a boat to get ſome water for preſent uſe, having ſcarcely any left on board. We found this article as convenient as could be expected, and the natives to behave with great civility. 1773. Auguſt. Tueſday 17.

Early in the morning I ſent the two launches, and the Reſolution's cutter, under the command of Mr. Gilbert, to endeavour to recover the anchors we had left behind us. They returned, about noon, with the Reſolution's bower anchor; but could not recover any of the Adventure's. The natives came off again with fruit, as the day before, but in no great quantity. I alſo had a party on ſhore, trading under the protection of a guard. Nothing, however, was brought to market but fruit and roots, though many hogs were ſeen (I was told) about the houſes of the natives. The cry was that they belonged to Waheatoua the *Earee de hi*, or King; and him we had not yet ſeen, nor, I believe, any other chief of note. Many, however, who called themſelves *Earees*, came on board, partly with a view of getting preſents, and partly to pilfer whatever came in their way. Wedneſd. 18.

One of this ſort of *Earees* I had, moſt of the day, in the cabbin, and made preſents to him and all his friends, which were not a few. At length he was caught taking things which did not belong to him, and handing them out of the quarter gallery. Many complaints of the like nature were made to me againſt thoſe on deck; which occaſioned my turning them all out of the ſhip. My cabbin gueſt made good haſte to be gone. I was ſo much exaſperated at his behaviour, that after he had got ſome diſtance from the ſhip, I fired two muſquets over his head, which made him quit the canoe and take to the water. I then ſent a boat to

1773. Auguſt. Wedneſ. 18.

take up the canoe; but as ſhe came near the ſhore, the people from thence began to pelt her with ſtones. Being in ſome pain for her ſafety, as ſhe was unarmed, I went myſelf in another boat to protect her, and ordered a great gun, loaded with ball, to be fired along the coaſt, which made them all retire from the ſhore, and I was ſuffered to bring away two canoes without the leaſt ſhew of oppoſition. In one of the canoes was a little boy, who was much frightened; but I ſoon diſſipated his fears, by giving him beads, and putting him on ſhore. A few hours after, we were all good friends again; and the canoes were returned to the firſt perſon who came for them.

It was not till the evening of this day that any one inquired after Tupia, and then but two or three. As ſoon as they learnt the cauſe of his death, they were quite ſatisfied; indeed, it did not appear to me, that it would have cauſed a moment's uneaſineſs in the breaſt of any one, had his death been occaſioned by any other means than by ſickneſs. As little inquiry was made after Aotourou, the man who went away with M. de Bougainville. But they were continually aſking for Mr. Banks, and ſeveral others who were with me in my former voyage.

Theſe people informed us, that Toutaha, the regent of the greater Peninſula of Otaheite, had been killed in a battle, which was fought between the two kingdoms about five months before; and that *Otoo* was the reigning prince. Tubourai Tamaide, and ſeveral more of our principal friends about Matavai, fell in this battle, as alſo a great number of common people; but, at preſent, a peace ſubſiſted between the two kingdoms.

On

On the 19th we had gentle breezes eaſterly with ſome ſmart ſhowers of rain. Early in the morning, the boats were again ſent to recover the Adventure's anchors, but returned with the ſame ill ſucceſs as the day before; ſo that we ceaſed to look for them any longer, thinking ourſelves very happy in having come off ſo well, conſidering the ſituation we had been in. In an excurſion which Captain Furneaux and I made along the coaſt, we met with a chief who entertained us with excellent fiſh, fruit, &c. In return for his hoſpitality, I made him a preſent of an ax and other things; and he afterwards accompanied us back to the ſhips, where he made but a ſhort ſtay. 1773. Auguſt. Thurſday 19.

Nothing worthy of note happened on the 20th, till the duſk of the evening, when one of the natives made off with a muſquet belonging to the guard on ſhore. I was preſent when this happened, and ſent ſome of our people after him, which would have been to little purpoſe, had not ſome of the natives, of their own accord, purſued the thief. They knocked him down, took from him the muſquet, and brought it to us. Fear, on this occaſion, certainly operated more with them than principle. They, however, deſerve to be applauded for this act of juſtice; for, if they had not given their immediate aſſiſtance, it would hardly have been in my power to have recovered the muſquet, by any gentle means whatever; and by making uſe of any other, I was ſure to loſe more than ten times its value. Friday 20.

The 21ſt the wind was at North a freſh breeze. This morning a chief made me a viſit, and preſented me with a quantity of fruit; among which were a number of cocoa-nuts we had drawn the water from, and afterwards thrown overboard. Theſe he had picked up, and tied in bundles ſo artfully, Saturday 21.

1773. August. Saturday 21. artfully, that we did not at firſt perceive the cheat. When he was told of it, without betraying the leaſt emotion, and, as if he knew nothing of the matter, he opened two or three of them himſelf, ſignified to us that he was ſatisfied it was ſo, and then went on ſhore and ſent off a quantity of plantains and bananoes. Having got on board a ſupply of water, fruit and roots, I determined to ſail in the morning to Matavai, as I found it was not likely that I ſhould get an interview with Waheatoua; without which it was very improbable we ſhould get any hogs. Two of the natives, who knew my intention, ſlept on board, with a view of going Sunday 22. with us to Matavai; but in the morning the wind blew freſh at N. W.; and, as we could not ſail, I ſent the trading party on ſhore as uſual.

In the evening I was informed that Waheatoua was come into the neighbourhood and wanted to ſee me. In conſequence of this information, I determined to wait one day longer in order to have an interview with this prince. Ac- Monday 23. cordingly, early the next morning, I ſet out in company with Captain Furneaux, Mr. Forſter, and ſeveral of the natives. We met the chief about a mile from the landing-place, towards which he was advancing to meet us; but as ſoon as he ſaw us he ſtopt, with his numerous train, in the open air. I found him ſeated upon a ſtool, with a circle of people round him, and knew him at firſt ſight and he me; having ſeen each other ſeveral times in 1769. At that time he was but a boy, and went by the name of Tearee, but upon the death of his father Waheatoua, he took upon him that name.

After the firſt ſalutation was over, having ſeated me on the ſame ſtool with himſelf, and the other gentlemen on

the ground by us, he began to enquire after ſeveral by name who were with me on my former voyage. He next inquired how long I would ſtay; and when I told him no longer than next day, he ſeemed ſorry, aſked me to ſtay ſome months, and at laſt came down to five days; promiſing that, in that time, I ſhould have hogs in plenty. But as I had been here already a week, without ſo much as getting one, I could not put any faith in this promiſe. And yet, I believe, if I had ſtayed, we ſhould have fared much better than at Matavai. The preſent I made him conſiſted of a ſhirt, a ſheet, a broad ax, ſpike nails, knives, looking-glaſſes, medals, beads, &c. In return, he ordered a pretty good hog to be carried to our boat. We ſtayed with him all the morning, during which time he never ſuffered me to go from his ſide, where he was ſeated. I was alſo ſeated on the ſame ſtool, which was carried from place to place by one of his attendants, whom we called ſtool-bearer. At length we took leave, in order to return on board to dinner; after which we viſited him again, and made him more preſents; and he in return gave Captain Furneaux and me each of us an hog. Some others were got by exchanges at the trading places: ſo that we got, in the whole, to-day, as much freſh pork as gave the crews of both ſhips a meal; and this in conſequence of our having this interview with the chief.

1773. Auguſt. Monday 23.

The 24th, early in the morning, we put to ſea with a light land-breeze. Soon after we were out, we got the wind at Weſt, which blew in ſqualls, attended with heavy ſhowers of rain. Many canoes accompanied us out to ſea with cocoa-nuts, and other fruits; and did not leave us till they had diſpoſed of their cargoes. Tueſday 24.

The

1773. August. Tueſday 24. The fruits we got here greatly contributed towards the recovery of the Adventure's ſick people. Many of them who had been ſo ill as not to be able to move without aſſiſtance, were, in this ſhort time, ſo far recovered, that they could walk about of themſelves. When we put in here, the Reſolution had but one ſcorbutic man on board, and a marine, who had been long ſick, and who died, the ſecond day after our arrival, of a complication of diſorders without the leaſt mixture of the ſcurvy. I left Lieutenant Pickerſgill with the cutter behind in the bay, to purchaſe hogs; as ſeveral had promiſed to bring ſome down to-day, and I was not willing to loſe them.

Wedneſ. 25. On the 25th, about noon, Mr. Pickerſgill returned with eight pigs, which he got at Oaiti-piha. He ſpent the night at Ohedea, and was well entertained by Ereti, the chief of that diſtrict. It was remarkable that this chief never once aſked after Aotourou; nor did he take the leaſt notice, when Mr. Pickerſgill mentioned his name. And yet Mr. de Bougainville tells us, this is the very chief who preſented Aotourou to him; which makes it the more extraordinary that he ſhould neither inquire after him now, nor when he was with us at Matavai; eſpecially as they believed that we and Mr. Bougainville came from the ſame country; that is, from *Pretane*, for ſo they called our country. They had not the leaſt knowledge of any other European nation; nor probably will they, unleſs ſome of thoſe men ſhould return who had lately gone from the iſle; of which mention ſhall be made by and bye. We told ſeveral of them, that M. de Bougainville came from *France*, a name they could by no means pronounce; nor could they pronounce that of *Paris* much better; ſo that it is not likely that they will remember either

either the one or the other long. Whereas *Pretane* is in every child's mouth, and will hardly ever be forgotten. It was not till the evening of this day that we arrived in Matavai bay. 1773. Auguſt.

CHAP. XI.

An Account of ſeveral Viſits to and from Otoo; of Goats being left on the Iſland; and many other Particulars which happened while the Ships lay in Matavai Bay.

BEFORE we got to an anchor, our decks were crowded with the natives; many of whom I knew, and almoſt all of them knew me. A great crowd were gotten together upon the ſhore; amongſt whom was Otoo their king. I was juſt going to pay him a viſit, when I was told he was *mataow'd*, and gone to Oparree. I could not conceive the reaſon of his going off in a fright, as every one ſeemed pleaſed to ſee me. A chief, whoſe name was Maritata, was at this time on board, and adviſed me to put off my viſit till the next morning, when he would accompany me; which I accordingly did. 1773. Auguſt. Wedneſ. 25.

After having given directions to pitch tents for the reception of the ſick, coopers, ſail-makers, and the guard, I ſet out on the 26th for Oparree; accompanied by Captain Furneaux, Mr. Forſter, and others, Maritata and his wife. As ſoon as we landed, we were conducted to Otoo, whom we found ſeated on the ground, under the ſhade of a tree, with an immenſe crowd round him. After the firſt compliments were over, I preſented him with ſuch articles as I gueſſed Thurſday 26.

1773. August. Thurſday 26. were moſt valuable in his eyes; well knowing that it was my intereſt to gain the friendſhip of this man. I alſo made preſents to ſeveral of his attendants; and, in return, they offered me cloth, which I refuſed to accept; telling them that what I had given was for *tiyo* (friendſhip). The king inquired for Tupia, and all the gentlemen that were with me in my former voyage, by name; although I do not remember that he was perſonally acquainted with any of us. He promiſed that I ſhould have ſome hogs the next day; but I had much ado to obtain a promiſe from him to viſit me on board. He ſaid he was, *mataou no te poupoue*, that is, afraid of the guns. Indeed all his actions ſhewed him to be a timorous prince. He was about thirty years of age, ſix feet high, and a fine, perſonable, well-made man as one can ſee. All his ſubjects appeared uncovered before him, his father not excepted. What is meant by uncovering, is the making bare the head and ſhoulders, or wearing no ſort of cloathing above the breaſt.

When I returned from Oparree, I found the tents, and the aſtronomer's obſervatories, ſet up, on the ſame ſpot where we obſerved the tranſit of Venus in 1769. In the afternoon, I had the ſick landed; twenty from the Adventure all ill of the ſcurvy; and one from the Reſolution. I alſo landed ſome marines for a guard, and left the command to Lieutenant Edgcumbe of the marines.

Friday 27. On the 27th, early in the morning, Otoo, attended by a numerous train, paid me a viſit. He firſt ſent into the ſhip a large quantity of cloth, fruits, a hog, and two large fiſh; and, after ſome perſuaſion, came aboard himſelf, with his ſiſter, a younger brother, and ſeveral more of his attendants. To all of them I made preſents; and, after breakfaſt, took the

the king, his ſiſter, and as many more as I had room for, into my boat, and carried them home to Oparree. I had no ſooner landed than I was met by a venerable old lady, the mother of the late Toutaha. She ſeized me by both hands, and burſt into a flood of tears, ſaying, *Toutaha Tiyo no Toutee matty Toutaha*—(Toutaha, your friend, or the friend of Cook, is dead). I was ſo much affected with her behaviour, that it would have been impoſſible for me to have refrained mingling my tears with hers, had not Otoo come and taken me from her. I, with ſome difficulty, prevailed on him to let me ſee her again, when I gave her an ax and ſome other things. Captain Furneaux, who was with me, preſented the king with two fine goats, male and female, which, if taken care of, or rather if no care at all is taken of them, will no doubt multiply. After a ſhort ſtay we took leave and returned on board. 1773. Auguſt. Friday 27.

Very early in the morning on the 28th, I ſent Mr. Pickerſgill, with the cutter, as far as Attahourou, to endeavour to procure hogs. A little after ſun-riſe, I had another viſit from Otoo, who brought me more cloth, a pig, and ſome fruit. His ſiſter, who was with him, and ſome of his attendants, came on board; but he and others went to the Adventure, with the like preſent to Captain Furneaux. It was not long before he returned with Captain Furneaux on board the Reſolution, when I made him a handſome return for the preſent he had brought me, and dreſſed his ſiſter out in the beſt manner I could. She, the king's brother, and one or two more were covered before him to-day. When Otoo came into the cabbin, Ereti and ſome of his friends were ſitting there. The moment they ſaw the king enter, they ſtripped themſelves in great haſte, being covered before. Saturday 28.

1773. August. Saturday 28.

Seeing I took notice of it, they ſaid *Earee, Earee*; giving me to underſtand that it was on account of Otoo being preſent. This was all the reſpect they paid him; for they never roſe from their ſeats, nor made him any other obeiſance. When the king thought proper to depart, I carried him again to Oparree in my boat; where I entertained him, and his people, with the bagpipes (of which muſic they are very fond), and dancing by the ſeamen. He, in return, ordered ſome of his people to dance alſo, which conſiſted chiefly of contortions. There were, however, ſome who could imitate the ſeamen tolerably well, both in country-dances and hornpipes. While we were here, I had a preſent of cloth from the late Toutaha's mother. This good old lady could not look upon me without ſhedding tears; however, ſhe was far more compoſed than before. When we took leave, the king promiſed to viſit me again the next day; but ſaid that I muſt firſt come to him. In the evening Mr. Pickerſgill came back empty; but with a promiſe of having ſome hogs, if he would return in a few days.

Sunday 29.

Next morning, after breakfaſt, I took a trip to Oparree, to viſit Otoo as he had requeſted, accompanied by Captain Furneaux and ſome of the officers. We made him up a preſent of ſuch things as he had not ſeen before. One article was a broad ſword; at the very ſight of which he was ſo intimidated, that I had much ado to perſuade him to accept of it, and to have it buckled upon him; where it remained but a ſhort time, before he deſired leave to take it off and ſend it out of his ſight.

Soon after we were conducted to the theatre; where we were entertained with a dramatic *heava*, or *play*, in which were both dancing and comedy. The performers were five men,



Published Feb.ry 1.st 1777 by Wm. Stidham in New Street Shoe Lane & Thos. Cadell in the Strand London.

N.o XXIV



men, and one woman, who was no leſs a perſon than the king's ſiſter. The muſic conſiſted of three drums only; it laſted about an hour and an half, or two hours; and, upon the whole, was well conducted. It was not poſſible for us to find out the meaning of the play. Some part ſeemed adapted to the preſent time, as my name was frequently mentioned. Other parts were certainly wholly unconnected with us. It apparently differed in nothing, that is in the manner of acting it, from thoſe we ſaw at Ulietea in my former voyage. The dancing-dreſs of the lady was more elegant than any I ſaw there, by being decorated with long taſſels, made of feathers, hanging from the waiſt downward. As ſoon as all was over, the king himſelf deſired me to depart; and ſent into the boat different kinds of fruit and fiſh, ready dreſſed. With this we returned on board; and the next morning he ſent me more fruit, and ſeveral ſmall parcels of fiſh. 1773. Auguſt. Sunday 29. Monday 30.

Nothing farther remarkable happened till 10 o'clock in the evening, when we were alarmed with the cry of murder, and a great noiſe, on ſhore, near the bottom of the bay, at ſome diſtance from our encampment. I ſuſpected that it was occaſioned by ſome of our own people; and immediately armed a boat, and ſent on ſhore, to know the occaſion of this diſturbance, and to bring off ſuch of our people as ſhould be found there. I alſo ſent to the Adventure, and to the poſt on ſhore, to know who were miſſing; for none were abſent from the Reſolution, but thoſe who were upon duty. The boat ſoon returned with three marines, and a ſeaman. Some others, belonging to the Adventure, were alſo taken, and being all put under confinement, the next morning I ordered them to be puniſhed according to their deſerts. Tueſday 31.

1773. August. Tueſday 31.

deſerts. I did not find that any miſchief was done, and our people would confeſs nothing. I believe this diſturbance was occaſioned by their making too free with the women. Be this as it will, the natives were ſo much alarmed, that they fled from their habitations in the dead of the night, and the alarm ſpread many miles along the coaſt. For when I went to viſit Otoo, in the morning, by appointment, I found him removed, or rather fled, many miles from the place of his abode. Even there I was obliged to wait ſome hours, before I could ſee him at all; and when I did, he complained of the laſt night's riot.

As this was intended to be my laſt viſit, I had taken with me a preſent ſuitable to the occaſion. Among other things were three Cape ſheep, which he had ſeen before and aſked for; for theſe people never loſe a thing by not aſking for it. He was much pleaſed with them; though he could be but little benefited, as they were all weathers; a thing he was made acquainted with. The preſents he got at this interview entirely removed his fears, and opened his heart ſo much, that he ſent for three hogs; one for me, one for Captain Furneaux, and one for Mr. Forſter. This laſt was ſmall, of which we complained, calling it *ete, ete.* Preſently after a man came into the circle, and ſpoke to the king with ſome warmth, and in a very peremptory manner; ſaying ſomething or other about hogs. We, at firſt, thought he was angry with the king for giving us ſo many, eſpecially as he took the little pig away with him. The contrary, however, appeared to be the true cauſe of his diſpleaſure; for, preſently after he was gone, a hog, larger than either of the other two, was brought us in lieu of the little one. When we took leave I acquainted him that I ſhould ſail from

the

the iſland the next day; at which he ſeemed much moved, and embraced me ſeveral times. We embarked to return on board, and he, with his numerous train, directed their march back to Oparree. 1773. Auguſt.

The ſick being all pretty well recovered, our water-caſks repaired, and water completed, as well as the neceſſary repairs of the ſhips, I determined to put to ſea without farther delay. Accordingly, on the 1ſt of September, I ordered every thing to be got off from the ſhore, and the ſhips to be unmoored. On this work we were employed the moſt of the day. In the afternoon Mr. Pickerſgill returned from Attahourou; to which place I had ſent him, two days before, for the hogs he had been promiſed. My old friend Pottatou, the chief of that diſtrict, his wife, or miſtreſs (I know not which), and ſome more of his friends, came along with Mr. Pickerſgill, in order to viſit me. They brought me a preſent of two hogs, and ſome fiſh; and Mr. Pickerſgill got two more hogs, by exchange, from Oamo: for he went in the boat as far as Paparra, where he ſaw old Oberea. She ſeemed much altered for the worſe, poor, and of little conſequence. The firſt words ſhe ſaid to Mr. Pickerſgill were, *Earee mataou ina boa*, Earee is frightened, you can have no hogs. By this it appeared that ſhe had little or no property, and was herſelf ſubject to the Earee; which I believe was not the caſe when I was here before. The wind, which had blown Weſterly all day, having ſhifted at once to the Eaſt, we put to ſea; and I was obliged to diſmiſs my friends ſooner than they wiſhed to go; but well ſatisfied with the reception they had met with. September. Wedneſ. 1.

Some

1773. September. Wedneſ. 1.

Some hours before we got under ſail, a young man, whoſe name was Poreo, came and deſired I would take him with me. I conſented, thinking he might be of ſervice to us on ſome occaſion. Many more offered themſelves, but I refuſed to take them. This youth aſked me for an ax and a ſpike nail for his father, who was then on board. He had them accordingly, and they parted juſt as we were getting under ſail, more like two ſtrangers than father and ſon. This raiſed a doubt in me whether it was ſo; which was farther confirmed by a canoe, conducted by two men, coming along-ſide, as we were ſtanding out of the bay, and demanding the young man in the name of Otoo. I now ſaw that the whole was a trick to get ſomething from me; well knowing that Otoo was not in the neighbourhood, and could know nothing of the matter. Poreo ſeemed, however, at firſt undetermined whether he ſhould go or ſtay; but he ſoon inclined to the former. I told them to return me the ax and nails, and then he ſhould go (and ſo he really ſhould), but they ſaid they were aſhore, and ſo departed. Though the youth ſeemed pretty well ſatisfied, he could not refrain from weeping, when he viewed the land aſtern.

CHAP.

CHAP. XII.

An Account of the Reception we met with at Huaheine, with the Incidents that happened while the Ships lay there, and of Omai, one of the Natives, coming away in the Adventure.

AS ſoon as we were clear of the bay, and our boats in, I directed my courſe for the Iſland of Huaheine, where I intended to touch. We made it the next day, and ſpent the night, making ſhort boards under the north end of the iſland. At day-light in the morning of the 3d, we made ſail for the harbour of Owharre; in which the Reſolution anchored, about nine o'clock, in twenty-four fathoms water. As the wind blew out of the harbour, I choſe to turn in by the ſouthern channel, it being the wideſt. The Reſolution turned in very well, but the Adventure, miſſing ſtays, got aſhore on the north ſide of the channel. I had the Reſolution's launch in the water ready, in caſe of an accident of this kind, and ſent her immediately to the Adventure. By this timely aſſiſtance, ſhe was got off again, without receiving any damage. Several of the natives, by this time, had come off to us, bringing with them ſome of the productions of the iſland; and, as ſoon as the ſhips were both in ſafety, I landed with Captain Furneaux, and was received by the natives with the utmoſt cordiality. I diſtributed ſome preſents among them; and preſently after, they brought down hogs, fowls, dogs, and fruits, which they willingly exchanged for hatchets, nails, beads, &c. The like trade

1773. September. Thurſday 2.

Friday 3.

1773. September. Friday 3. was ſoon opened on board the ſhips; ſo that we had a fair proſpect of being plentifully ſupplied with freſh pork and fowls; and, to people in our ſituation, this was no unwelcome thing. I learnt that my old friend Oree, chief of the iſle, was ſtill living, and that he was haſtening to this part to ſee me.

Saturday 4. Early next morning, Lieutenant Pickerſgill ſailed with the cutter, on a trading party, toward the ſouth end of the iſle. I alſo ſent another trading party on ſhore near the ſhips, with which I went myſelf, to ſee that it was properly conducted at the firſt ſetting out, a very neceſſary point to be attended to. Every thing being ſettled to my mind, I went, accompanied by Captain Furneaux and Mr. Forſter, to pay my firſt viſit to Oree, who, I was told, was waiting for me. We were conducted to the place by one of the natives; but were not permitted to go out of our boat, till we had gone through ſome part of the following ceremony, uſually performed at this iſle, on ſuch like occaſions. The boat in which we were deſired to remain, being landed before the chief's houſe, that ſtood cloſe to the ſhore, five young plantain trees, which are their emblems of peace, were brought on board ſeparately, and with ſome ceremony. Three young pigs, with their ears ornamented with cocoa-nut fibres, accompanied the firſt three; and a dog, the fourth. Each had its particular name, and purpoſe, rather too myſterious for us to underſtand. Laſtly, the chief ſent to me the inſcription engraved on a ſmall piece of pewter, which I left with him in July 1769. It was in the ſame bag I had made for it, together with a piece of counterfeit Engliſh coin, and a few beads, put in at the ſame time; which ſhews how well he had taken care of the whole. When

they had made an end of putting into the boat the things juſt mentioned, our guide, who ſtill remained with us, deſired us to decorate three young plantain trees with looking-glaſſes, nails, medals, beads, &c. &c. This being accordingly done, we landed with theſe in our hands, and were conducted towards the chief, through the multitude; they making a lane, as it were, for us to paſs through. We were made to ſit down a few paces ſhort of the chief, and our plantains were then taken from us, and, one by one, laid before him, as the others had been laid before us. One was for *Eatoua* (or God), the ſecond for the *Earee* (or King), and the third for *Tiyo* (or Friendſhip). This being done, I wanted to go to the King, but was told that he would come to me; which he accordingly did, fell upon my neck, and embraced me. This was by no means ceremonious; the tears, which trickled plentifully down his venerable old cheeks, ſufficiently beſpoke the language of his heart. The whole ceremony being over, all his friends were introduced to us, to whom we made preſents. Mine to the chief conſiſted of the moſt valuable articles I had; for I regarded this man as a father. In return he gave me a hog, and a quantity of cloth, promiſing that all our wants ſhould be ſupplied; and it will ſoon appear how well he kept his word. At length we took leave, and returned on board; and, ſome time after, Mr. Pickerſgill returned alſo with fourteen hogs. Many more were got by exchanges on ſhore, and along-ſide the ſhips; beſides fowls, and fruit in abundance.

1773. September. Saturday 4.

This good old chief made me a viſit early in the morning on the 5th, together with ſome of his friends, bringing me a hog and ſome fruit, for which I made him a ſuitable return. He carried his kindneſs ſo far, as not to fail to ſend me every day, for my table, the very beſt of ready dreſſed

Sunday 5.

1773. September. Sunday 5. fruit, and roots, and in great plenty. Lieutenant Pickerſgill being again ſent with the two boats, in ſearch of hogs, returned in the evening with twenty-eight; and about four times that number were purchaſed on ſhore, and along-ſide the ſhips.

Monday 6. Next morning the trading party, conſiſting of only two or three people, were ſent on ſhore as uſual; and, after breakfaſt, I went to the place myſelf, when I learnt that one of the inhabitants had been very troubleſome and inſolent. This man being pointed out to me, completely equipped in the war habit with a club in each hand, as he ſeemed bent on miſchief, I took theſe from him, broke them before his eyes, and, with ſome difficulty, forced him to retire from the place. As they told me that he was a chief, this made me the more ſuſpicious of him, and occaſioned me to ſend for a guard, which till now I had thought unneceſſary. About this time, Mr. Sparrman, having imprudently gone out alone botanizing, was ſet upon by two men, who ſtripped him of every thing he had about him, except his trowſers, and ſtruck him ſeveral times with his own hanger, but happily did him no harm. As ſoon as they had accompliſhed their end, they made off; after which another of the natives brought a piece of cloth to cover him, and conducted him to the trading place, where were a great number of the inhabitants. The very inſtant Mr. Sparrman appeared in the condition I have juſt mentioned, they fled to a man with the utmoſt precipitation. My firſt conjectures were, that they had ſtolen ſomething; but we were ſoon undeceived, when we ſaw Mr. Sparrman, and the affair was related to us. As ſoon as I could recal a few of the natives, and had made them ſenſible that I ſhould take no ſtep to injure thoſe who

who were innocent, I went to Oree to complain of this outrage, taking with us the man who came back with Mr. Sparrman, to confirm the complaint. As ſoon as the chief heard the whole affair related, he wept aloud, as did many others. After the firſt tranſports of his grief were over, he began to expoſtulate with his people, telling them (as far as we could underſtand) how well I had treated them, both in this and my former voyage, and how baſe it was in them to commit ſuch actions. He then took a very minute account of the things Mr. Sparrman had been robbed of, promiſed to do all in his power to recover them, and riſing up, deſired me to follow him to my boat. When the people ſaw this, being, as I ſuppoſed, apprehenſive of his ſafety, they uſed every argument to diſſuade him from what they, no doubt, thought a raſh ſtep. He haſtened into the boat, notwithſtanding all they could do or ſay. As ſoon as they ſaw their beloved chief wholly in my power, they ſet up a great outcry. The grief they ſhewed was inexpreſſible; every face was bedewed with tears; they prayed, entreated, nay attempted to pull him out of the boat. I even joined my entreaties to theirs; for I could not bear to ſee them in ſuch diſtreſs. All that could be ſaid, or done, availed nothing. He inſiſted on my coming into the boat, which was no ſooner done than he ordered it to be put off. His ſiſter, with a ſpirit equal to that of her royal brother, was the only perſon who did not oppoſe his going. As his intention in coming into our boat was to go with us in ſearch of the robbers, we proceeded accordingly as far as it was convenient by water, then landed, entered the country, and travelled ſome miles inland, the chief leading the way, inquiring of every one he ſaw. At length he ſtepped into a houſe by the road ſide, ordered ſome cocoa-nuts for us, and after we were a little refreſhed,

1773. September. Monday 6.

1773. September. Monday 6. refreſhed, wanted to proceed ſtill farther. But this I oppoſed, thinking that we might be carried to the very fartheſt end of the iſland, after things, the moſt of which, before they came into our hands again, might not be worth the bringing home. The chief uſed many arguments to perſuade me to proceed, telling me that I might ſend my boat round to meet us, or that he would get a canoe to bring us home, if I thought it too far to travel. But I was reſolved to return, and he was obliged to comply and return with me, when he ſaw I would follow him no farther. I only deſired he would ſend ſomebody for the things; for I found that the thieves had got ſo much ſtart of us, that we might follow them to the remoteſt parts of the iſle, without ſo much as ſeeing them. Beſides, as I intended to ſail the next morning, this occaſioned a great loſs to us, by putting a ſtop to all manner of trade; for the natives were ſo much alarmed, that none came near us, but thoſe that were about the chief. It, therefore, became the more neceſſary for me to return, to reſtore things to their former ſtate. When we got back to our boat, we there found Oree's ſiſter, and ſeveral more perſons who had travelled by land to the place. We immediately ſtepped into the boat in order to return on board, without ſo much as aſking the chief to accompany us. He, however, inſiſted on going alſo; and followed us into the boat in ſpite of the oppoſition and entreaties of thoſe about him; his ſiſter followed his example, and the tears and prayers of her daughter, who was about ſixteen or eighteen years of age, had no weight with her on this occaſion. The chief ſat at table with us, and made a hearty dinner; his ſiſter, according to cuſtom, eat nothing. After dinner, I ſufficiently rewarded them for the confidence they had put

in

in me; and, ſoon after, carried them both on ſhore, where ſome hundreds of people waited to receive them, many of whom embraced their chief with tears of joy. All was now joy and peace: the people crowded in, from every part, with hogs, fowls, and fruit, ſo that we preſently filled two boats: Oree himſelf preſented me with a large hog and a quantity of fruit. The hanger (the only thing of value Mr. Sparrman had loſt) with part of his coat, were brought us; and we were told, we ſhould have the others the next day. Some of the officers, who were out on a ſhooting party, had ſome things ſtolen from them, which were returned in like manner. 1773. September. Monday 6.

Thus ended the troubleſome tranſactions of this day, which I have been the more particular in relating, becauſe it ſhews what great confidence this brave old chief put in us; it alſo, in ſome degree, ſhews that friendſhip is ſacred with them. Oree and I were profeſſed friends in all the forms cuſtomary among them; and he ſeemed to think that this could not be broken by the act of any other perſons. Indeed this ſeemed to be the great argument he made uſe of to his people, when they oppoſed his going into my boat. His words were to this effect.—"Oree (meaning me, for ſo "I was always called) and I are friends; I have done no-"thing to forfeit his friendſhip; why then ſhould I not go "with him?" We, however, may never find another chief, who will act in the ſame manner under ſimilar circumſtances. It may be aſked, What had he to fear? to which I anſwer, Nothing. For it was not my intention to hurt an hair of his head, or to detain him a moment longer than he deſired. But how was he or the people to know this? They were not ignorant, that, if he was once in my power, the whole

1773. September. whole force of the iſland could not take him from me, and that, let my demands for his ranſom have been ever ſo high, they muſt have complied with them. Thus far their fears, both for his and their own ſafety, were founded in reaſon.

Tueſday 7. On the 7th, early in the morning, while the ſhips were unmooring, I went to pay my farewell viſit to Oree, accompanied by Captain Furneaux and Mr. Forſter. We took with us for a preſent, ſuch things as were not only valuable, but uſeful. I alſo left with him the inſcription plate he had before in keeping, and another ſmall copper-plate on which were engraved theſe words, "Anchored here, his Britannic "Majeſty's ſhips Reſolution and Adventure, September 1773," together with ſome medals, all put up in a bag; of which the chief promiſed to take care, and to produce, to the firſt ſhip or ſhips that ſhould arrive at the iſland. He then gave me a hog; and, after trading for ſix or eight more, and loading the boat with fruit, we took leave, when the good old chief embraced me with tears in his eyes. At this interview, nothing was ſaid about the remainder of Mr. Sparrman's clothes. I judged they were not brought in; and, for that reaſon, did not mention them, leſt I ſhould give the chief pain about things I did not give him time to recover; for this was early in the morning.

When we returned to the ſhips, we found them crowded round with canoes full of hogs, fowls, and fruit, as at our firſt arrival. I had not been long on board, before Oree himſelf came, to inform me, as we underſtood, that the robbers were taken, and to deſire us to go on ſhore, either to puniſh, or to ſee them puniſhed; but this could not be done, as the Reſolution was juſt under ſail, and the Adventure already out of the harbour. The chief ſtayed on board

till

till we were a full half league out at ſea; then took a moſt affectionate leave of me; and went away in a canoe, conducted by one man and himſelf; all the others having gone long before. I was ſorry that it was not convenient for me to go on ſhore with him, to ſee in what manner theſe people would have been puniſhed; for I am ſatisfied, this was what brought him on board. 1773. September. Tueſday 7.

During our ſhort ſtay at the ſmall but fertile iſle of Huaheine, we procured to both ſhips not leſs than three hundred hogs, beſides fowls and fruits; and, had we ſtayed longer, might have got many more: for none of theſe articles of refreſhment were ſeemingly diminiſhed, but appeared every where in as great abundance as ever.

Before we quitted this iſland Captain Furneaux agreed to receive on board his ſhip a young man named Omai, a native of Ulietea, where he had had ſome property, of which he had been diſpoſſeſſed by the people of Bolabola. I at firſt rather wondered that Captain Furneaux would encumber himſelf with this man, who, in my opinion, was not a proper ſample of the inhabitants of theſe happy iſlands, not having any advantage of birth, or acquired rank; nor being eminent in ſhape, figure, or complexion. For their people of the firſt rank are much fairer, and uſually better behaved, and more intelligent, than the middling claſs of people, among whom Omai is to be ranked. I have, however, ſince my arrival in England, been convinced of my error: for excepting his complexion, (which is undoubtedly of a deeper hue than that of the *Earees* or gentry, who, as in other countries, live a more luxurious life, and are leſs expoſed to the heat of the ſun) I much doubt whether any other of the natives would have given more general ſa-

1773. September. Tuesday 7.

tisfaction by his behaviour among us. Omai has moſt certainly a very good underſtanding, quick parts, and honeſt principles; he has a natural good behaviour, which rendered him acceptable to the beſt company, and a proper degree of pride, which taught him to avoid the ſociety of perſons of inferior rank. He has paſſions of the ſame kind as other young men, but has judgment enough not to indulge them in any improper exceſs. I do not imagine that he has any diſlike to liquor, and if he had fallen into company where the perſon who drank the moſt, met with the moſt approbation, I have no doubt, but that he would have endeavoured to gain the applauſe of thoſe with whom he aſſociated; but fortunately for him, he perceived that drinking was very little in uſe but among inferior people, and as he was very watchful into the manners and conduct of the perſons of rank who honoured him with their protection, he was ſober and modeſt, and I never heard that, during the whole time of his ſtay in England, which was two years, he ever once was diſguiſed with wine, or ever ſhewed an inclination to go beyond the ſtricteſt rules of moderation.

Soon after his arrival in London, the Earl of Sandwich, the firſt Lord of the Admiralty, introduced him to his Majeſty at Kew, when he met with a moſt gracious reception, and imbibed the ſtrongeſt impreſſion of duty and gratitude to that great and amiable prince, which I am perſuaded he will preſerve to the lateſt moment of his life. During his ſtay among us he was careſſed by many of the principal nobility, and did nothing to forfeit the eſteem of any one of them; but his principal patrons were the Earl of Sandwich, Mr. Banks, and Dr. Solander; the former probably thought it a duty of his office to protect and countenance an inhabi-

tant

tant of that hoſpitable country, where the wants and diſtreſſes of thoſe in his department had been alleviated and ſupplied in the moſt ample manner; the others, as a teſtimony of their gratitude for the generous reception they had met with during their reſidence in his country. It is to be obſerved, that though Omai lived in the midſt of amuſements during his reſidence in England, his return to his native country was always in his thoughts, and though he was not impatient to go, he expreſſed a ſatisfaction as the time of his return approached. He embarked with me in the Reſolution, when ſhe was fitted out for another voyage, loaded with preſents from his ſeveral friends, and full of gratitude for the kind reception and treatment he had experienced among us. 1773. September. Tueſday 7.

CHAP XIII.

Arrival at, and Departure of the Ships from, Ulietea: with an Account of what happened there, and of Oedidee, one of the Natives, coming away in the Reſolution.

THE chief was no ſooner gone, than we made ſail for Ulietea (where I intended to ſtop a few days). Arriving off the harbour of Ohamaneno at the cloſe of the day, we ſpent the night making ſhort boards. It was dark, but we were ſufficiently guided by the fiſhers lights on the reefs and ſhores of the iſles. The next morning, after making a few trips, we gained the entrance of the harbour; and, as the wind blew directly out, I ſent a boat to lie in ſoundings, that we might know when to anchor. As ſoon as the ſignal was made by her, we borrowed cloſe to the Wedneſ. 8.

1773. September. Wedneſd. 8. South point of the channel; and, with our ſails ſet, ſhooting within the boat, we anchored in ſeventeen fathoms water. We then carried out anchors and hawſers, to warp in by; and, as ſoon as the Reſolution was out of the way, the Adventure came up in like manner, and warped in, by the Reſolution. The warping in, and mooring the ſhips, took up the whole day.

We were no ſooner at anchor at the entrance of the harbour, than the natives crowded round us in their canoes with hogs and fruit. The latter they exchanged for nails and beads; the former we refuſed as yet, having already as many on board as we could manage. Several we were, however, obliged to take, as many of the principal people brought off little pigs, pepper, or eavoa-root, and young plantain trees, and handed them into the ſhip, or put them into the boats along-ſide, whether we would or no; for if we refuſed to take them on board, they would throw them into the boats. In this manner, did theſe good people welcome us to their country.

I had forgot to mention, that Tupia was much inquired after at Huaheine; but, at this place, every one aſked about him, and the occaſion of his death; and, like true philoſophers, were perfectly ſatisfied with the anſwers we gave them. Indeed, as we had nothing but the truth to tell, the ſtory was the ſame, by whomſoever told.

Thurſday 9. Next morning we paid a formal viſit to Oreo, the chief of this part of the iſle, carrying with us the neceſſary preſents. We went through no ſort of ceremony at landing, but were, at once, conducted to him. He was ſeated in his own houſe, which ſtood near the water-ſide, where he and his friends received us with great cordiality. He expreſſed much

much ſatisfaction at ſeeing me again, and deſired that we might exchange names, which I accordingly agreed to. I believe this is the ſtrongeſt mark of friendſhip they can ſhew to a ſtranger. He inquired after Tupia, and all the gentlemen, by name, who were with me when I firſt viſited the iſland. After we had made the chief and his friends the neceſſary preſents, we went on board with a hog, and ſome fruit, received from him in return; and in the afternoon he gave me another hog, ſtill larger, without aſking for the leaſt acknowledgment. Exchanges for fruit, &c. were moſtly carried on along-ſide the ſhips. I attempted to trade for theſe articles on ſhore; but did not ſucceed, as the moſt of them were brought in canoes from diſtant parts, and carried directly to the ſhips. 1773. September. Thurſday 9.

After breakfaſt, on the 10th, Captain Furneaux and I paid the chief a viſit; and we were entertained by him with ſuch a comedy, or dramatic *heava*, as is generally acted in theſe iſles. The muſic conſiſted of three drums; the actors were ſeven men, and one woman, the chief's daughter. The only entertaining part in the drama, was a theft committed by a man and his accomplice, in ſuch a maſterly manner, as ſufficiently diſplayed the genius of the people in this vice. —The theft is diſcovered before the thief has time to carry off his prize; then a ſcuffle enſues with thoſe ſet to guard it, who, though four to two, are beat off the ſtage, and the thief and his accomplices bear away their plunder in triumph. I was very attentive to the whole of this part, being in full expectation that it would have ended very differently. For I had before been informed that *Teto* (that is, the Thief) was to be acted, and had underſtood that the theft was to be puniſhed with death, or a good *tiparrahying* (or beating), a puniſh- Friday 10.

1773. September. Friday 10. puniſhment, we are told, they inflict on ſuch as are guilty of this crime. Be this as it may, ſtrangers are certainly excluded from the protection of this law; them they rob, with impunity, on every occaſion that offers. After the play was over, we returned on board to dinner; and in the cool of the evening, took a walk on ſhore, where we learnt from one of the natives, that nine ſmall iſlands, two of which were uninhabited, lay to the weſtward, at no great diſtance from hence.

Saturday 11. On the 11th, early in the morning, I had a viſit from Oreo and his ſon, a youth about twelve years of age. The latter brought me a hog, and ſome fruit; for which I made him a preſent of an axe, and dreſſed him in a ſhirt, and other things, which made him not a little proud of himſelf. Having ſtayed ſome hours, they went on ſhore; as I alſo did ſoon after, but to another part. The chief hearing I was on ſhore, came to the place where he found the boat, into which he put a hog, and a quantity of fruit, without ſaying a word to any body, and, with ſome of his friends, came on board, and dined with us. After dinner I had a viſit from Oo-oorou, the principal chief of the iſle. He was introduced to us by Oreo, and brought with him, as a preſent, a large hog, for which I made him a handſome return. Oreo employed himſelf in buying hogs for me (for we now began to take of them), and he made ſuch bargains as I had reaſon to be ſatisfied with. At length they all took leave, after making me promiſe to viſit them next morning; which I accordingly did, in company with ſeveral of the officers and gentlemen. Oreo ordered an *heava* to be acted for our entertainment, in which two very pretty young women were the actreſſes. This *heava* was ſomewhat different from the

Sunday 12.

one

one I ſaw before, and not ſo entertaining. Oreo, after it was over, accompanied us on board, together with two of his friends. 1773. September.

The following day was ſpent much in the ſame manner; and early in the morning of the 14th, I ſent Mr. Pickerſgill, with the Reſolution's launch, and Adventure's cutter, to Otaha, to procure an additional ſupply of bananoes, and plantains, for a ſea-ſtore; for we could get little more of theſe articles at Ulietea than were ſufficient for preſent conſumption. Oreo, and ſome of his friends, paid me a pretty early viſit this morning. I acquainted the chief that I would dine with him, and deſired he would order two pigs to be dreſſed after their manner, which he accordingly did; and, about one o'clock, I, and the officers and gentlemen of both ſhips, went to partake of them. When we came to the chief's houſe, we found the cloth laid; that is, green leaves were ſtrewed thick on the floor. Round them we ſeated ourſelves; preſently one of the pigs came over my head ſouce upon the leaves, and immediately after the other; both ſo hot as hardly to be touched. The table was garniſhed round with hot bread-fruit, and plantains, and a quantity of cocoa-nuts brought for drink. Each man being ready, with his knife in his hand, we turned to without ceremony; and it muſt be owned, in favour of their cookery, that victuals were never cleaner, nor better dreſſed. For, though the pigs were ſerved up whole, and the one weighed between fifty and ſixty pounds, and the other about half as much; yet all the parts were equally well done, and eat much ſweeter than if dreſſed in any of our methods. The chief and his ſon, and ſome other of his male friends, eat with us, and pieces were handed to others who ſat behind: for we had Monday 13. Tueſday 14.

1773. September. Tueſday 14. a vaſt crowd about us; ſo that it might be truly ſaid we dined in public. The chief never failed to drink his glaſs of Madeira whenever it came to his turn, not only now, but at all other times when he dined with us, without ever being once affected by it. As ſoon as we had dined, the boat's crew took the remainder; and by them, and thoſe about them, the whole was conſumed. When we roſe up, many of the common people ruſhed in, to pick up the crumbs which had fallen, and for which they ſearched the leaves very narrowly. This leads me to believe that, though there is plenty of pork at theſe iſles, but little falls to their ſhare. Some of our gentlemen being preſent when theſe pigs were killed and dreſſed, obſerved the chief to divide the entrails, lard, &c. into ten or twelve equal parts, and ſerve it out to certain people. Several daily attended the ſhips, and aſſiſted the butchers, for the ſake of the entrails of the hogs we killed. Probably little elſe falls to the ſhare of the common people. It, however, muſt be owned, that they are exceedingly careful of every kind of proviſion, and waſte nothing that can be eaten by man; fleſh and fiſh eſpecially.

In the afternoon we were entertained with a play. Plays, indeed, had been acted almoſt every day ſince we had been here, either to entertain *us*, or for their own amuſement, or perhaps both.

Wedneſ. 15. Next morning produced ſome circumſtances which fully prove the timorous diſpoſition of theſe people. We were ſurpriſed to find that none of them came off to the ſhips as uſual. Two men belonging to the Adventure having ſtayed on ſhore all night, contrary to orders, my firſt conjectures were, that the natives had ſtripped them, and were now afraid to come near us, leſt we ſhould take ſome ſtep to revenge the inſult:

1773. September. Wedneſ. 15.

inſult: but, in order to be better ſatisfied, Captain Furneaux and I went aſhore to Oreo's houſe, which we found quite empty; he and all his family gone, and the whole neighbourhood, in a manner, quite deſerted. The two men belonging to the Adventure made their appearance, and informed us that they had been very civilly treated by the natives; but could give no account of the cauſe of their precipitate flight. All that we could learn, from the very few who durſt come near us, was, that ſeveral were killed, others wounded, by our guns, pointing out to us where the balls went in and out of the body, &c. This relation gave me a good deal of uneaſineſs for the ſafety of our people gone to Otaha, fearing that ſome diſturbance had happened at that iſland. However, in order to be better informed, I determined, if poſſible, to ſee the chief himſelf. Accordingly we embarked in our boat, having one of the natives with us, and rowed alongſhore to the northward, the way we were told he was gone. We ſoon came in ſight of the canoe in which he was; but before we could come up with her he had got on ſhore. We landed preſently after, and found he was gone ſtill farther. An immenſe crowd, however, waited our landing, who entreated me to follow him. One man offered to carry me on his back; but the whole ſtory appearing rather more myſterious than ever, and being all unarmed, I did not chuſe to ſeparate myſelf from the boat, but embarked again, and rowed after him. We ſoon came before the place where our guide told us he was, and put in the boat accordingly. It grounded at ſome diſtance from the ſhore, where we were met by a venerable old lady, wife to the chief. She threw herſelf into my arms, and wept bitterly, inſomuch that it was not poſſible to get one plain word from her. With this old lady in my hand I went aſhore, contrary to the advice of

1773. September. Wedneſ. 15. my young man from Otaheite, who ſeemed more afraid than any of us, probably believing every word the people had told us. I found the chief ſeated under the ſhade of a houſe, before which was a large area, and ſurrounded by a vaſt number of people. As ſoon as I came to him, he threw his arms about me, and burſt into tears; in which he was accompanied by all the women, and ſome of the men, ſo that the lamentation became general. Aſtoniſhment alone kept me from joining with them. It was ſome time before I could get a word from any one; at laſt, all my inquiries gave me no other information, than that they were alarmed on account of our boats being abſent; thinking that the people in them had deſerted from us, and that I ſhould take ſome violent means to recover them. For when we aſſured them that the boats would return back, they ſeemed cheerful and ſatisfied, and, to a man, denied that any one was hurt, either of their own or our people; and ſo it afterwards proved. Nor did it appear that there was the leaſt foundation for theſe alarms; nor could we ever find out by what means this general conſternation firſt took its riſe. After a ſtay of about an hour, I returned on board; three of the natives coming along with us, who proclaimed the peace as we rowed along ſhore, to all they ſaw.

Thus matters were again reſtored to their former footing;
Thurſday 16. and the next morning they came off to the ſhips, as uſual.—
After breakfaſt Captain Furneaux and I paid the chief a viſit. We found him at his own houſe perfectly eaſy; inſomuch that he, and ſome of his friends, came on board, and dined with us. I was now told that my Otaheitean young man Poreo, had taken a reſolution to leave me. I have juſt mentioned *before*, his being with us when I followed Oreo, and his

his adviſing me not to go on ſhore. He was ſo much afraid, at that time, that he remained in the boat till he heard all matters were reconciled. Then he came out; and, preſently after, met with a young woman, for whom he had contracted a friendſhip. Having my powder-horn in keeping, he came and gave it to one of my people who was by me, and then went away with her, and I ſaw him no more. 1773. September. Thurſday 16.

In the afternoon our boats returned from Otaha, pretty well laden with plantains; an article we were moſt in want of. They made the circuit of the iſland, conducted by one of the Earees, whoſe name was Boba, and were hoſpitably entertained by the people; who provided them with victuals and lodging. The firſt night they were entertained with a play; the ſecond night, their repoſe was diſturbed by the natives ſtealing their military cheſt: this put them on making repriſals, by which means they recovered the moſt of what they had loſt.

Having now got on board a large ſupply of refreſhments, I determined to put to ſea the next morning, and made the ſame known to the chief, who promiſed to ſee me again before we departed. At four o'clock we began to unmoor; and, as ſoon as it was light, Oreo, his ſon, and ſome of his friends, came on board. Many canoes alſo came off with fruit and hogs; the latter they even begged of us to take from them, calling out *Tiyo boa atoi*—I am your friend, take my hog, and give me an ax. But our decks were already ſo full of them, that we could hardly move; having, on board both ſhips, between three and four hundred. By the increaſe of our ſtock, together with what we had ſalted and conſumed, I judge that we got at this iſland 400, or upwards. Many, indeed, were only roaſters; others again weighed one Friday 17.

1773. September. Friday 17. hundred pounds, or upwards; but the general run was from forty to ſixty. It is not eaſy to ſay how many we might have got, could we have found room for all that were offered us.

The chief, and his friends, did not leave me till we were under ſail; and, before he went away, preſſed me much to know if I would not return, and when? Queſtions which were daily put to me by many of theſe iſlanders. My Otaheitean youth's leaving me proved of no conſequence; as many young men, of this iſland, voluntarily offered to come away with us. I thought proper to take on board one, who was about 17 or 18 years of age, named Oedidee, a native of Bolabola, and a near relation of the great Opoony, chief of that iſland. Soon after we were out of the harbour, and had made ſail, we obſerved a canoe following us, conducted by two men. Whereupon I brought to; and they preſently came along-ſide, having brought me a preſent of roaſted fruit, and roots, from Oreo. I made them a proper return before I diſmiſſed them, and then ſet ſail to the Weſt, with the Adventure in company.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIV.

An Account of a Spaniſh Ship viſiting Otaheite; the preſent State of the Iſlands; with ſome Obſervations on the Diſeaſes and Cuſtoms of the Inhabitants; and ſome Miſtakes concerning the Women corrected.

I SHALL now give ſome farther account of theſe iſlands; for, although I have been pretty minute in relating the daily tranſactions, ſome things, which are rather intereſting, have been omitted. 1773. September.

Soon after our arrival at Otaheite, we were informed that a ſhip, about the ſize of the Reſolution, had been in at Owhaiurua harbour near the S. E. end of the iſland, where ſhe remained about three weeks; and had been gone about three months before we arrived. We were told that four of the natives were gone away in her, whoſe names were Debedebea -- Paoodou—Tanadooee—and Opahiah. At this time, we conjectured this was a French ſhip; but, on our arrival at the Cape of Good Hope, we learnt ſhe was a Spaniard, which had been ſent out from America. The Otaheiteans complained of a diſeaſe communicated to them by the people in this ſhip, which they ſaid affected the head, throat, and ſtomach, and at length killed them. They ſeemed to dread it much, and were continually inquiring if we had it. This ſhip they diſtinguiſhed by the name of *Pahai no Pep-pe* (ſhip of Peppe), and called the diſeaſe *Apa no Pep-pe*, juſt as they call the venereal diſeaſe *Apa no Pretane* (Engliſh diſeaſe),

1773. September.

diſeaſe), though they, to a man, ſay it was brought to the iſle by M. de Bougainville; but I have already obſerved that they thought M. de Bougainville came from *Pretane*, as well as every other ſhip which has touched at the iſle.

Were it not for this aſſertion of the natives, and none of Captain Wallis's people being affected with the venereal diſeaſe, either while they were at Otaheite, or after they left it, I ſhould have concluded that, long before theſe iſlanders were viſited by Europeans, this, or ſome diſeaſe which is near a kin to it, had exiſted amongſt them. For I have heard them ſpeak of people dying of a diſorder which we interpreted to be the pox, before that period. But be this as it will, it is now far leſs common amongſt them, than it was in the year 1769, when I firſt viſited theſe iſles. They ſay they can cure it; and ſo it fully appears. For, notwithſtanding moſt of my people made pretty free with the women, very few of them were afterwards affected with the diſorder, and thoſe who were, had it in ſo ſlight a manner, that it was eaſily removed. But amongſt the natives, whenever it turns to a pox, they tell us it is incurable. Some of our people pretend to have ſeen ſome of them who had this laſt diſorder in a high degree; but the Surgeon, who made it his buſineſs to inquire, could never ſatisfy himſelf in this point. Theſe people are, and were before Europeans viſited them, very ſubject to ſcrophulous diſeaſes; ſo that a ſeaman might eaſily miſtake one diſorder for another.

The iſland of Otaheite which, in the years 1767 and 1768, as it were, ſwarmed with hogs and fowls, was now ſo ill ſupplied with theſe animals, that hardly any thing could induce the owners to part with them. The few they had, at this time, among them, ſeemed to be at the diſpoſal of the kings.

kings. For while we lay at Oaiti-piha Bay, in the kingdom of Tiarrabou, or leſſer Peninſula, every hog or fowl we ſaw, we were told, belonged to Waheatoua; and all we ſaw in the kingdom of Opoureonu, or the greater Peninſula, belonged to Otoo. During the ſeventeen days we were at this iſland, we got but twenty-four hogs; the half of which came from the two kings themſelves; and, I believe, the other half were ſold us by their permiſſion or order. We were, however, abundantly ſupplied with all the fruits the iſland produces; except bread-fruit, which was not in ſeaſon either at this or the other iſles. Cocoa-nuts and plantains were what we got the moſt of; the latter, together with a few yams and other roots, were to us a ſuccedaneum for bread. At Otaheite we got great plenty of apples, and a fruit like a nectarine, called by them *Aheeya*. This fruit was common to all the iſles; but apples we got only at Otaheite, and found them of infinite uſe to the ſcorbutic people. Of all the ſeeds that have been brought to thoſe iſlands by Europeans, none have ſucceeded but pumpkins; and theſe they do not like; which is not to be wondered at. 1773. September.

The ſcarcity of hogs at Otaheite may be owing to two cauſes; firſt, to the number which have been conſumed, and carried off by the ſhipping which have touched here of late years; and ſecondly, to the frequent wars between the two kingdoms. We know of two ſince the year 1767; at preſent a peace ſubſiſts between them; though they do not ſeem to entertain much friendſhip for each other. I never could learn the cauſe of the late war, nor who got the better in the conflict. In the battle, which put an end to the diſpute, many were killed on both ſides. On the part of Opoureonu, fell Toutaha, and ſeveral other chiefs, who

1773. September. were mentioned to me by name. Toutaha lies interred in the family *Marai* at Oparree; and his mother, and ſeveral other women who were of his houſehold, are now taken care of by Otoo the reigning prince—a man, who, at firſt, did not appear to us to much advantage. I know but little of Waheatoua of Tiarrabou. This prince, who is not above twenty years of age, appeared with all the gravity of a man of fifty. His ſubjects do not uncover before him, or pay him any outward obeiſance as is done to Otoo; nevertheleſs, they ſeem to ſhew him full as much reſpect, and he appeared in rather more ſtate. He was attended by a few middle-aged, or elderly men, who ſeemed to be his counſellors. This is what appeared to me to be the then ſtate of Otaheite. The other iſlands, that is, Huaheine, Ulietea, and Otaha, were in a more flouriſhing ſtate than they were when I was there before. Since that time, they had enjoyed the bleſſing of peace; the people ſeemed to be as happy as any under heaven; and well they may, for they poſſeſs not only the neceſſaries, but many of the luxuries of life in the greateſt profuſion; and my young man told me that hogs, fowls, and fruits are in equal plenty at Bola-bola, a thing which Tupia would never allow. To clear up this ſeeming contradiction, I muſt obſerve, that the one was prejudiced againſt, and the other in favour of, this iſle.

The produce of the iſlands, the manners and cuſtoms of the natives, &c. having been treated at large in the narrative of my former voyage, it will be unneceſſary to take notice of theſe ſubjects in this, unleſs where I can add new matter, or clear up any miſtakes which may have been committed.

As I had ſome reaſon to believe, that amongſt their religious cuſtoms, human ſacrifices were ſometimes conſidered as

as neceſſary, I went one day to a *Marai* in Matavai, in company with Captain Furneaux; having with us, as I had upon all other occaſions, one of my men who ſpoke their language tolerably well, and ſeveral of the natives, one of whom appeared to be an intelligent, ſenſible man. In the *Marai* was a *Tupapow*, on which lay a corpſe and ſome viands; ſo that every thing promiſed ſucceſs to my inquiries. I began with aſking queſtions relating to the ſeveral objects before me, if the plantains, &c. were for the *Eatua?* If they ſacrificed to the *Eatua*, hogs, dogs, fowls, &c.? to all of which he anſwered in the affirmative. I then aſked, If they ſacrificed men to the *Eatua?* he anſwered, *Taata eno;* that is, bad men they did, firſt *Tiparrahy*, or beating them till they were dead. I then aſked him, If good men were put to death in this manner? his anſwer was No, only *Taata eno*. I aſked him, If any *Earees* were? he ſaid, they had hogs to give to the *Eatua*, and again repeated *Taata eno*. I next aſked him, If *Towtows*, that is, ſervants or ſlaves, who had no hogs, dogs, or fowls, but yet were good men, if they were ſacrificed to the *Eatua?* his anſwer was, No, only bad man. I aſked him ſeveral more queſtions, and all his anſwers ſeemed to tend to this one point, that men for certain crimes were condemned to be ſacrificed to the gods, provided they had not wherewithal to redeem themſelves. This, I think, implies, that, on ſome occaſions, human ſacrifices are conſidered as neceſſary, particularly when they take ſuch men as have, by the laws of their country, forfeited their lives, and have nothing to redeem them; and ſuch will generally be found among the lower claſs of people. 1773. September.

The man of whom I made theſe inquiries, as well as ſome others, took ſome pains to explain the whole of this cuſtom to us; but we were not maſters enough of their language

1773. September.

to underſtand them. I have ſince learnt from Omai, that they offer human ſacrifices to the Supreme Being. According to his account, what men ſhall be ſo ſacrificed, depends on the caprice of the high prieſt, who, when they are aſſembled on any ſolemn occaſion, retires alone into the houſe of God, and ſtays there ſome time. When he comes out, he informs them, that he has ſeen and converſed with their great God (the high prieſt alone having that privilege), and that he has aſked for a human ſacrifice, and tells them that he has deſired ſuch a perſon, naming a man preſent, whom moſt probably the prieſt has an antipathy againſt. He is immediately killed, and ſo falls a victim to the prieſt's reſentment, who, no doubt, (if neceſſary) has addreſs enough to perſuade the people that he was a bad man. If I except their funeral ceremonies, all the knowledge that has been obtained of their religion, has been from information; and as their language is but imperfectly underſtood, even by thoſe who pretend to the greateſt knowledge of it, very little on this head is yet known with certainty.

The liquor which they make from the plant called *Ava ava*, is expreſſed from the root, and not from the leaves, as mentioned in the narrative of my former voyage. The manner of preparing this liquor is as ſimple as it is diſguſting to an European. It is thus: ſeveral people take ſome of the root, and chew it till it is ſoft and pulpy; then they ſpit it out into a platter or other veſſel, every one into the ſame; when a ſufficient quantity is chewed, more or leſs water is put to it, according as it is to be ſtrong or weak; the juice, thus diluted, is ſtrained through ſome fibrous ſtuff like fine ſhavings; after which it is fit for drinking, and this is always done immediately. It has a pepperiſh taſte, drinks flat,

and rather inſipid. But though it is intoxicating, I ſaw only one inſtance where it had that effect; as they generally drink it with great moderation, and but little at a time. Sometimes they chew this root in their mouths, as Europeans do tobacco, and ſwallow their ſpittle; and ſometimes I have ſeen them eat it wholly. 1773. September.

At Ulietea they cultivate great quantities of this plant. At Otaheite but very little. I believe there are but few iſlands in this ſea, that do not produce more or leſs of it; and the natives apply it to the ſame uſe, as appears by Le Mair's account of Horn iſland, wherein he ſpeaks of the natives making a liquor from a plant in the ſame manner as above mentioned.

Great injuſtice has been done the women of Otaheite, and the Society Iſles, by thoſe who have repreſented them, without exception, as ready to grant the laſt favour to any man who will come up to their price. But this is by no means the caſe; the favours of married women, and alſo the unmarried of the better ſort, are as difficult to be obtained here as in any other country whatever. Neither can the charge be underſtood indiſcriminately of the unmarried of the lower claſs, for many of theſe admit of no ſuch familiarities. That there are proſtitutes here, as well as in other countries, is very true, perhaps more in proportion, and ſuch were thoſe who came on board the ſhips to our people, and frequented the poſt we had on ſhore. By ſeeing theſe mix indiſcriminately with thoſe of a different turn, even of the firſt rank, one is, at firſt, inclined to think that they are all diſpoſed the ſame way, and that the only difference is in the price. But the truth is, the woman who becomes a proſtitute, does not ſeem, in their opinion, to have committed a

1773. September. crime of ſo deep a dye as to exclude her from the eſteem and ſociety of the community in general. On the whole, a ſtranger who viſits England might, with equal juſtice, draw the characters of the women there, from thoſe which he might meet with on board the ſhips in one of the naval ports, or in the purlieus of Covent-Garden and Drury-Lane. I muſt, however, allow that they are all completely verſed in the art of coquetry, and that very few of them fix any bounds to their converſation. It is, therefore, no wonder that they have obtained the character of libertines.

To what hath been ſaid of the geography of theſe iſles, in the narrative of my former voyage, I ſhall now only add, that we found the latitude of Oaiti-piha bay, in Otaheite, to be 17° 46′ 28″ South, and the longitude 0′ 21′ 25½″ Eaſt from Point Venus; or 149° 13′ 24″ Weſt from Greenwich. The difference both of latitude and longitude, between Point Venus and Oaiti-piha, is greater than I ſuppoſed it to be, when I made the circuit of the iſland in 1769, by two miles, and 4¾ miles reſpectively. It is, therefore, highly probable, that the whole iſland is of a greater extent, than I, at that time, eſtimated it to be. The aſtronomers ſet up their obſervatory, and made their obſervations, on Point Venus, the latitude of which they found to be 17° 29′ 13″ South. This differs but two ſeconds from that which Mr. Green and I found; and its longitude, viz. 149° 34′ 49½″ Weſt, for any thing that is yet known to the contrary, is as exact.

Mr. Kendal's watch was found to be gaining on mean time 8″ 863 per day, which is only 0″ 142 leſs than at Queen Charlotte's Sound, conſequently its error in longitude was trifling.

A VOY-

A

VOYAGE

TOWARDS THE

SOUTH POLE,

AND

ROUND THE WORLD.

BOOK II.

From our Departure from the Society Isles, to our Return to, and leaving them the Second Time.

CHAP. I.

Passage from Ulietea to the Friendly Islands, with an Account of the Discovery of Hervey's Island, and the Incidents that happened at Middleburg.

AFTER leaving Ulietea, as before mentioned, I steered to the West, inclining to the South; to get clear of the tracks of former navigators, and to get into the latitude of the islands of Middleburg and Amsterdam: for I intended to run as far West as these islands, and to touch there if I found it convenient, before I hauled up for New Zealand. I generally lay to every night, lest we might

1773. September. Friday 17.

1773. September. Wedneſ. 22. might paſs any land in the dark. Part of the 21ſt and 22d the wind blew from N. W., attended with thunder, lightning, and rain; having a large ſwell from S. S. E. and S., which kept up for ſeveral days. An indication that no land was near us in that direction.

Thurſday 23. On the 23d, at ten o'clock in the morning, land was ſeen from the top-maſt head, and at noon from the deck, extending from S. by W. to S. W. by S. We hauled up for it with the wind at S. E., and found it to conſiſt of two or three ſmall iſlots, connected together by breakers like moſt of the low iſles in the ſea, lying in a triangular form, and about ſix leagues in circuit. They were clothed with wood, among which were many cocoa-nut trees. We ſaw no people, or ſigns of inhabitants; and had reaſon to think there were none. The ſituation of this iſle, which is in the latitude of 19° 18′ South, longitude 158° 54′ Weſt, is not very different from that aſſigned by Mr. Dalrymple to La Dezena. But as this is a point not eaſily determined, I named it Hervey's Iſland, in honour of the Honourable Captain Hervey of the Navy, one of the Lords of the Admiralty, and now Earl of Briſtol.

As the landing on this iſle, if practicable, would have cauſed a delay which I could ill ſpare at this time, we reSaturday 25. ſumed our courſe to the Weſt; and on the 25th we again began to uſe our ſea-biſcuit, the fruit which had ſerved as a ſuccedaneum being all conſumed; but our ſtock of freſh pork ſtill continued, each man having as much every day as was needful. In our route to the Weſt we now and then ſaw men of war, and tropic birds, and a ſmall ſea bird, which is ſeldom ſeen but near the ſhores of the iſles; we therefore conjectured that we had paſſed ſome land at no great

174 45 20 15 30

Track

FII

ROTTERDAM

Comango

Comango ette

Tonamai

Telle..es

Anamocka ette

ANAMOCKA

Oghao

Ammattafoa

Resolution in 1774.

15

40

45

Longitude 30 West from Greenwich.

55

175

Published Feb.ry 1.st 1777. by Wm. Strahan in New Street, S...

CHART

OF THE

IENDLY ISLES.

ces

4 5 | 2 1 | 1 5 | 3 0 | 174

15

30

45

Track of the

MIDDLEBURG
or
EAOOWE

40
English Road
30
30
42 43

Resolution

Pur

Adventure in 1773

175

AMSTERDAM or TONGATABU

Maria Bay
10
20

Van Diemens Road
30
40

4 5 | 2 1 | 1 5 | 3 0

Lane & The.s Cadell in the Strand, London.

N.o XIV

great diſtance. As we advanced to the Weſt, the variation of the compaſs gradually increaſed, ſo that on the 29th, being the latitude of 21° 26′ South, longitude 170° 40′ Weſt, it was 10° 45′ Eaſt. 1773. September. Wedneſd. 29.

At two o'clock P. M. on the 1ſt of October, we made the iſland of Middleburg, bearing W. S. W.; at ſix o'clock it extended from S. W. by W. to N. W., diſtant four leagues, at which time another land was ſeen in the direction of N. N. W. The wind being at S. S. E., I hauled to the South, in order to get round the South end of the iſland before the morning; but at eight o'clock a ſmall iſland was ſeen lying off it, and not knowing but they might be connected by a reef, the extent of which we muſt be ignorant of, I reſolved to ſpend the night where we were. At day-break, the next morning, we bore up for the S. W. ſide of Middleburg, paſſing between it and the little iſle above mentioned, where we found a clear channel two miles broad. October. Friday 1. Saturday 2.

After ranging the S. W. ſide of the greater iſle, to about two-thirds of its length, at the diſtance of half a mile from the ſhore, without ſeeing the leaſt proſpect of either anchorage or landing-place, we bore away for Amſterdam, which we had in ſight. We had ſcarcely turned our ſails before we obſerved the ſhores of Middleburg to aſſume another aſpect, ſeeming to offer both anchorage and landing. Upon this we hauled the wind, and plyed in under the iſland. In the mean time, two canoes, each conducted by two or three men, came boldly along-ſide; and ſome of them entered the ſhip without heſitation. This mark of confidence gave me a good opinion of theſe iſlanders, and determined me to viſit them if poſſible. After making a few trips, we found good anchorage, and came to in twenty-five fathoms water,

1773. October. Saturday 2. water, and gravel bottom, at three cables length from the ſhore. The higheſt land on the iſland bore S. E. by E.; the North point N. E. ½ E, and the Weſt S. by W. ½ W., and the iſland of Amſterdam extending from N. by W. ½ W. to N. W. ½ W. We had ſcarcely got to an anchor before we were ſurrounded by a great number of canoes full of people, who had brought with them cloth, and other curioſities, which they exchanged for nails, &c. Several came on board; among them was one whom, by the authority he ſeemed to have over the others, I found to be a chief, and accordingly made him a preſent of a hatchet, ſpike-nails, and ſeveral other articles, with which he was highly pleaſed. Thus I obtained the friendſhip of this chief, whoſe name was Tioony.

Soon after, a party of us embarked in two boats, in company with Tioony; who conducted us to a little creek formed by the rocks, right a-breaſt of the ſhips, where landing was extremely eaſy, and the boats ſecure againſt the ſurf. Here we found an immenſe crowd of people, who welcomed us on ſhore with loud acclamations. Not one of them had ſo much as a ſtick, or any other weapon in their hands; an indubitable ſign of their pacific intentions. They thronged ſo thick round the boats with cloth, matting, &c. to exchange for nails, that it was ſome time before we could get room to land. They ſeemed to be more deſirous to give than receive; for many who could not get near the boats, threw into them, over the others heads, whole bales of cloth, and then retired, without either aſking, or waiting to get any thing in return. At length the chief cauſed them to open to the right and left, and make room for us to land. He then conducted us up to his houſe, which was ſituated

about three hundred yards from the ſea, at the head of a fine lawn, and under the ſhade of ſome ſhaddock trees. The ſituation was moſt delightful. In front was the ſea, and the ſhips at anchor; behind, and on each ſide, were plantations, in which were ſome of the richeſt productions of Nature. The floor was laid with mats, on which we were ſeated, and the people ſeated themſelves in a circle round us on the outſide. Having the bagpipes with us, I ordered them to be played; and, in return, the chief directed three young women to ſing a ſong, which they did with a very good grace; and having made each of them a preſent, this immediately ſet all the women in the circle a ſinging. Their ſongs were muſical and harmonious, and nowiſe harſh or diſagreeable. After ſitting here ſome time, we were, at our own requeſt, conducted into one of the adjoining plantations, where the chief had another houſe, into which we were introduced. Bananoes and cocoa-nuts were ſet before us to eat, and a bowl of liquor prepared in our preſence of the juice of *eava* for us to drink. Pieces of the root were firſt offered to us to chew; but as we excuſed ourſelves from aſſiſting in the operation, this was performed by others. When ſufficiently chewed, it was put into a large wooden bowl; then mixed with water, in the manner already related; and as ſoon as it was properly ſtrained for drinking, they made cups by folding of green leaves, which held near half a pint, and preſented to each of us one of theſe filled with the liquor. But I was the only one who taſted it; the manner of brewing it having quenched the thirſt of every one elſe. The bowl was, however, ſoon emptied of its contents, of which both men and women partook. I obſerved that they never filled the ſame cup twice; nor did two perſons drink out of the ſame; each had a freſh cup and freſh liquor.

1773. October. Saturday 2.

1773. October. Saturday 2.

This houſe was ſituated at one corner of the plantation, and had an area before it on which we were ſeated. The whole was planted round with fruit and other trees, whoſe ſpreading branches afforded an agreeable ſhade, and whoſe fragrance diffuſed a pleaſing odour through the air.

Before we had well viewed the plantation it was noon, and we returned on board to dinner, with the chief in our company. He ſat at table, but eat nothing, which, as we had freſh pork roaſted, was a little extraordinary. After dinner we landed again, and were received by the crowd as before. Mr. Forſter with his botanical party, and ſome of the officers and gentlemen, walked into the country. Captain Furneaux and myſelf were conducted to the chief's houſe, where fruit and ſome greens, which had been ſtewed, were ſet before us to eat. As we had but juſt dined, it cannot be ſuppoſed we eat much; but Oedidee, and Omai, the man on board the Adventure, did honour to the feaſt. After this we ſignified our deſire of ſeeing the country. Tioony very readily aſſented, and conducted us through ſeveral plantations, which were laid out with great judgment, and incloſed with very neat fences made of reeds. They were all in very good order, and well planted with various fruit-trees, roots, &c. The chief took ſome pains to let us know the moſt of them belonged to himſelf. Near ſome of the houſes, and in the lanes that divided the plantations, were running about ſome hogs and very large fowls, which were the only domeſtic animals we ſaw; and theſe they did not ſeem willing to part with. Nor did any one, during the whole day, offer in exchange any fruit, or roots, worth mentioning; which determined me to leave this iſland, and to viſit that of Amſterdam.

The

The evening brought every one on board, highly delighted with the country, and the very obliging behaviour of the inhabitants; who ſeemed to vie with each other in doing what they thought would give us pleaſure. The ſhips were crowded with people the whole day, traffick-ing with thoſe on board, in which the greateſt good order was obſerved; and I was ſorry that the ſeaſon of the year would not admit of my making a longer ſtay with them. Early the next morning, while the ſhips were getting under ſail, I went aſhore with Captain Furneaux and Mr. Forſter, to take leave of the chief. He met us at the landing-place, and would have conducted us to his houſe, had we not excuſed ourſelves. We therefore were ſeated on the graſs, where we ſpent about half an hour in the midſt of a vaſt crowd of people. After making the chief a preſent, conſiſting of various articles, and an aſſortment of garden ſeeds, I gave him to underſtand that we were going away, at which he ſeemed not at all moved. He, and two or three more, came into our boat, in order to accompany us on board; but ſeeing the Reſolution under ſail, he called to a canoe to put along-ſide, into which he and his friends went, and returned on ſhore. While he remained in our boat, he continued to exchange fiſh-hooks for nails, and engroſſed the trade in a manner wholly to himſelf; but, when on ſhore, I never ſaw him make the leaſt exchange.

1773. October. Saturday 2.

Sunday 3.

CHAP. II.

The Arrival of the Ships at Amſterdam; a Deſcription of a Place of Worſhip; and an Account of the Incidents which happened while they remained at that Iſland.

1773. October. Sunday 3. AS ſoon as I was on board, we made ſail down to Amſterdam. The people of this iſle were ſo little afraid of us, that ſome met us in three canoes about midway between the two iſles. They uſed their utmoſt efforts to get on board, but without effect, as we did not ſhorten ſail for them, and the rope which we gave them broke. They then attempted to board the Adventure, and met with the ſame diſappointment. We ran along the S. W. coaſt of Amſterdam at half a mile from ſhore, on which the ſea broke in a great ſurf. We had an opportunity, by the help of our glaſſes, to view the face of the iſland, every part of which ſeemed to be laid out in plantations. We obſerved the natives running along the ſhore, diſplaying ſmall white flags, which we took for enſigns of peace, and anſwered them by hoiſting a St. George's enſign. Three men belonging to Middleburg, who, by ſome means or other, had been left on board the Adventure, now quitted her, and ſwam to the ſhore; not knowing that we intended to ſtop at this iſle, and having no inclination, as may be ſuppoſed, to go away with us.

As ſoon as we opened the weſt ſide of the iſle, we were met by ſeveral canoes, each conducted by three or four men. They came boldly along-ſide, preſented us with ſome *Eava* root, and then came on board, without farther ceremony, inviting

inviting us, by all the friendly ſigns they could make, to go to their iſland, and pointing to the place where we ſhould anchor; at leaſt we ſo underſtood them. After a few boards we anchored in Van Diemen's Road, in eighteen fathoms water, little more than a cable's length from the breakers which line the coaſt. We carried out the coaſting anchor and cable to ſeaward, to keep the ſhip from tailing on the rocks, in caſe of a ſhift of wind or a calm. This laſt anchor lay in forty-ſeven fathoms water; ſo ſteep was the bank on which we anchored. By this time we were crowded with people; ſome came off in canoes, and others ſwam; but, like thoſe of the other iſle, brought nothing with them but cloth, matting, &c. for which the ſeamen only bartered away their cloaths. As it was probable they would ſoon feel the effects of this kind of traffic, with a view to put a ſtop to it, and to obtain the neceſſary refreſhments, I gave orders that no ſort of curioſities ſhould be purchaſed by any perſon whatever. 1773. October. Sunday 3.

The good effect of this order was found in the morning. For when the natives ſaw we would purchaſe nothing but eatables, they brought off bananoes and cocoa-nuts in abundance, ſome fowls and pigs; all of which they exchanged for ſmall nails and pieces of cloth: even old rags of any ſort, was enough for a pig, or a fowl. Monday 4.

Matters being thus eſtabliſhed, and proper perſons appointed to trade under the direction of the officers to prevent diſputes, after breakfaſt I landed, accompanied by Captain Furneaux, Mr. Forſter, and ſeveral of the officers; having along with us a chief, or perſon of ſome note, whoſe name was Attago, who had attached himſelf to me, from the firſt moment of his coming on board, which was before we anchored. I know not how he came to diſcover that I

was

1773. October. Monday 4. was the commander; but, certain it is, he was not long on deck before he ſingled me out from all the other gentlemen, making me a preſent of ſome cloth, and other things he had about him: and, as a greater teſtimony of friendſhip, we now exchanged names; a cuſtom which is practiſed at Otaheite, and the Society Iſles. We were lucky, or rather we may thank the natives, for having anchored before a narrow creek in the rocks which line the ſhore. To this creek we were conducted by my friend Attago; and there we landed dry on the beach, and within the breakers, in the face of a vaſt crowd of people, who received us in the ſame friendly manner that thoſe of Middleburg had done.

As ſoon as we were landed, all the gentlemen ſet out into the country, accompanied by ſome of the natives. But the moſt of them remained with Captain Furneaux and me, who amuſed ourſelves ſome time in diſtributing preſents amongſt them; eſpecially to ſuch as Attago pointed out; which were not many, but who, I afterwards found, were of ſuperior rank to himſelf. At this time, however, he ſeemed to be the principal perſon, and to be obeyed as ſuch. After we had ſpent ſome time on the beach, as we complained of the heat, Attago immediately conducted and ſeated us under the ſhade of a tree, ordering the people to form a circle round us. This they did, and never once attempted to puſh themſelves upon us like the Otaheiteans.

After ſitting here ſome time, and diſtributing ſome preſents to thoſe about us, we ſignified our deſire to ſee the country. The chief immediately took the hint, and conducted us along a lane that led to an open green, on the one ſide of which was a houſe of worſhip built on a mount that had been raiſed by the hand of man, about ſixteen or eighteen

eighteen feet above the common level. It had an oblong figure, and was incloſed by a wall or parapet of ſtone, about three feet in height. From this wall the mount roſe with a gentle ſlope, and was covered with a green turf. On the top of it ſtood the houſe, which had the ſame figure as the mount, about twenty feet in length, and fourteen or ſixteen broad. As ſoon as we came before the place, every one ſeated himſelf on the green, about fifty or ſixty yards from the front of the houſe. Preſently came three elderly men; who ſeated themſelves between us and it, and began a ſpeech, which I underſtood to be a prayer, it being wholly directed to the houſe. This laſted about ten minutes; and then the prieſts, for ſuch I took them to be, came and ſat down along with us, when we made them preſents of ſuch things as were about us. Having then made ſigns to them that we wanted to view the premiſes, my friend Attago immediately got up, and going with us, without ſhewing the leaſt backwardneſs, gave us full liberty to examine every part of it.

1773. October. Monday 4.

In the front were two ſtone ſteps leading to the top of the wall; from this the aſcent to the houſe was eaſy, round which was a fine gravel walk. The houſe was built, in all reſpects, like to their common dwelling-houſes; that is, with poſts and rafters; and covered with palm thatch. The eaves came down within about three feet of the ground, which ſpace was filled up with ſtrong matting made of palm leaves as a wall. The floor of the houſe was laid with fine gravel; except in the middle, where there was an oblong ſquare of blue pebbles, raiſed about ſix inches higher than the floor. At one corner of the houſe ſtood an image rudely carved in wood, and on one ſide lay another; each about two

1773. October. Monday 4.

feet in length. I, who had no intention to offend either them or their gods, did not ſo much as touch them, but aſked Attago, as well as I could, if they were *Eatuas* or gods. Whether he underſtood me or no I cannot ſay; but he immediately turned them over and over, in as rough a manner as he would have done any other log of wood, which convinced me that they were not there as repreſentatives of the Divinity. I was curious to know if the dead were interred there, and aſked Attago ſeveral queſtions relative thereto; but I was not ſure that he underſtood me; at leaſt I did not underſtand the anſwers he made, well enough to ſatisfy my inquiries. For the reader muſt know that, at our firſt coming among theſe people, we hardly could underſtand a word they ſaid. Even my Otaheitean youth, and the man on board the Adventure, were equally at a loſs: but more of this by and bye. Before we quitted the houſe we thought it neceſſary to make an offering at the altar. Accordingly we laid down upon the blue pebbles, ſome medals, nails, and ſeveral other things; which we had no ſooner done than my friend Attago took them up, and put them in his pocket. The ſtones with which the walls were made that incloſed this mount, were ſome of them nine or ten feet by four, and about ſix inches thick. It is difficult to conceive how they can cut ſuch ſtones out of the coral rocks.

This mount ſtood in a kind of grove, open only on the ſide which fronted the high road, and the green on which the people were ſeated. At this green or open place, was a junction of five roads, two or three of which appeared to be very public ones. The groves were compoſed of ſeveral ſorts of trees. Among others was the *Etoa* tree, as it is called at Otaheite, of which are made clubs, &c. and a kind of low

palm, which is very common in the northern parts of New Holland. 1773. October.

After we had done examining this place of worſhip, which in their language is called *A-ſia-tou-ca*, we deſired to return; but, inſtead of conducting us to the water-ſide, as we expected, they ſtruck into a road leading into the country. This road, which was about ſixteen feet broad, and as level as a bowling-green, ſeemed to be a very public one; there being many other roads from different parts, leading into it, all incloſed on each ſide, with neat fences made of reeds, and ſhaded from the ſcorching ſun by fruit-trees. I thought I was tranſported into the moſt fertile plains in Europe. There was not an inch of waſte ground; the roads occupied no more ſpace than was abſolutely neceſſary; the fences did not take up above four inches each; and even this was not wholly loſt, for in many were planted ſome uſeful trees or plants. It was every where the ſame; change of place altered not the ſcene. Nature, aſſiſted by a little art, no where appears in more ſplendor than at this iſle. In theſe delightful walks we met numbers of people; ſome travelling down to the ſhips with their burdens of fruit; others returning back empty. They all gave us the road by turning either to the right or left, and ſitting down, or ſtanding, with their backs to the fences, till we had paſſed.

At ſeveral of the croſs roads, or at the meeting of two or more roads, were generally *Aſiatoucas*, ſuch as already deſcribed; with this difference, the mounts were palliſadoed round, inſtead of a ſtone wall. At length, after walking ſeveral miles, we came to one larger than common; near to which was a large houſe belonging to an old chief in our

1773. October. company. At this houſe we were deſired to ſtop, which we acordingly did, and were treated with fruit, &c.

We were no ſooner ſeated in the houſe, than the eldeſt of the prieſts began a ſpeech or prayer, which was firſt directed to the *Aſiatouca*, and then to me, and alternately. When he addreſſed me, he pauſed at every ſentence, till I gave a nod of approbation. I, however, did not underſtand one ſingle word he ſaid. At times, the old gentleman ſeemed to be at a loſs what to ſay; or perhaps his memory failed him; for, every now and then, he was prompted by one of the other prieſts who ſat by him. Both during this prayer and the former one, the people were ſilent, but not attentive. At this laſt place we made but a ſhort ſtay. Our guides conducted us down to our boat, and we returned with Attago to our ſhip to dinner. We had no ſooner got on board, than an old gentleman came along-ſide, who, I underſtood from Attago, was ſome king or great man. He was, accordingly, uſhered on board; when I preſented him with ſuch things as he moſt valued (being the only method to make him my friend) and ſeated him at table to dinner. We now ſaw that he was a man of conſequence; for Attago would not ſit down and eat before him, but got to the other end of the table; and, as the old chief was almoſt blind, he ſat there, and eat with his back towards him. After the old man had eaten a bit of fiſh and drank two glaſſes of wine, he returned aſhore. As ſoon as Attago had ſeen him out of the ſhip, he came and took his place at table, finiſhed his dinner, and drank two glaſſes of wine. When dinner was over, we all went aſhore, where we found the old chief, who preſented me with a hog; and he and ſome others, took a walk with us into the country.

Before

Before we ſet out, I happened to go down with Attago to the landing-place, and there found Mr. Wales in a laughable, though diſtreſſed ſituation. The boats which brought us on ſhore, not being able to get near the landing-place for want of a ſufficient depth of water; he pulled off his ſhoes and ſtockings to walk through, and as ſoon as he got on dry land, he put them down betwixt his legs to put on again, but they were inſtantly ſnatched away by a perſon behind him, who immediately mixed with the crowd. It was impoſſible for him to follow the man bare-footed over the ſharp coral rocks, which compoſe the ſhore, without having his feet cut to pieces. The boat was put back to the ſhip, his companions had each made his way through the crowd, and he left in this condition alone. Attago ſoon found out the thief, recovered his ſhoes and ſtockings, and ſet him at liberty. Our route into the country, was by the firſt mentioned *Aſiatouca*, before which we again ſeated ourſelves, but had no prayers although the old prieſt was with us. Our ſtay here was but ſhort. The old chief probably thinking that we might want water on board, conducted us to a plantation hard by, and ſhewed us a pool of freſh water, though we had not made the leaſt enquiry after any. I believe this to be the ſame that Taſman calls the *waſhing-place* for the king and his nobles. 1773. October.

From hence we were conducted down to the ſhore of Maria bay, or N. E. ſide of the iſle; where, in a boat-houſe, was ſhewn to us a fine large double canoe not yet launched. The old chief did not fail to make us ſenſible it belonged to himſelf. Night now approaching, we took leave of him, and returned on board, being conducted by Attago down to the water-ſide.

1773. October. Mr. Forſter and his party ſpent the day in the country botaniſing; and ſeveral of the officers were out ſhooting. All of them were very civilly treated by the natives. We had alſo a briſk trade for bananoes, cocoa-nuts, yams, pigs, and fowls; all of which were procured for nails, and pieces of cloth. A boat from each ſhip was employed trading aſhore, and bringing off their cargoes as ſoon as they were laden, which was generally in a ſhort time. By this method we got cheaper, and with leſs trouble, a good quantity of fruit, as well as other refreſhments, from people who had no canoes to carry them off to the ſhips.

Tueſday 5. Pretty early in the morning on the 5th, my friend brought me a hog and ſome fruit; for which I gave him a hatchet, a ſheet, and ſome red cloth. The pinnace was ſent aſhore to trade as uſual; but ſoon returned. The officer informed me that the natives were for taking every thing out of the boat, and, in other reſpects, were very troubleſome. The day before, they ſtole the grapling at the time the boat was riding by it, and carried it off undiſcovered. I now judged it neceſſary to have a guard on ſhore, to protect the boats and people whoſe buſineſs required their being there; and accordingly ſent the marines, under the command of Lieutenant Edgcumbe. Soon after, I went myſelf, with my friend Attago, Captain Furneaux, and ſeveral of the gentlemen. At landing, we found the old chief who preſented me with a pig. After this, Captain Furneaux and I took a walk into the country, with Mr. Hodges, to make drawings of ſuch places and things as were moſt intereſting. When this was done we returned on board to dinner, with my friend and two other chiefs; one of which ſent a hog on board the Adventure for Captain Furneaux, ſome hours before, without

out ſtipulating for any return. The only inſtance of this kind.—My friend took care to put me in mind of the pig the old king gave me in the morning; for which I now gave a chequed ſhirt and a piece of red cloth. I had tied them up for him to carry aſhore; but with this he was not ſatisfied. He wanted to have them put on him; which was no ſooner done, than he went on deck, and ſhewed himſelf to all his countrymen. He had done the ſame thing in the morning with the ſheet I gave him. In the evening we all went on ſhore again, where we found the old king, who took to himſelf every thing my friend and the others had got.

1773. October. Tueſday 5.

The different trading parties were ſo ſucceſsful to-day as to procure for both ſhips a tolerably good ſupply of refreſhments. In conſequence of which, I, the next morning, gave every one leave to purchaſe what curioſities and other things they pleaſed. After this, it was aſtoniſhing to ſee with what eagerneſs every one caught at every thing he ſaw. It even went ſo far as to become the ridicule of the natives, who offered pieces of ſticks and ſtones to exchange. One waggiſh boy took a piece of human excrement on the end of a ſtick, and held it out to every one he met with.

This day, a man got into the maſter's cabin, through the outſide ſcuttle, and took out ſome books and other things. He was diſcovered juſt as he was getting out into his canoe, and purſued by one of our boats, which obliged him to quit the canoe and take to the water. The people in the boat made ſeveral attempts to lay hold on him; but he, as often, dived under the boat, and at laſt having unſhipped the rudder, which rendered her ungovernable, by this means he got clear off. Some other very daring thefts were committed

1773. October. committed at the landing-place. One fellow took a ſeaman's jacket out of the boat, and carried it off, in ſpite of all that our people in her could do. Till he was both purſued and fired at by them, he would not part with it; nor would he have done it then, had not his landing been intercepted by ſome of us who were on ſhore. The reſt of the natives, who were very numerous, took very little notice of the whole tranſaction; nor were they the leaſt alarmed when the man was fired at.

Wedneſ. 6. My friend Attago having viſited me again next morning, as uſual, brought with him a hog, and aſſiſted me in purchaſing ſeveral more. Afterwards we went aſhore; viſited the old king, with whom we ſtaid till noon; then returned on board to dinner, with Attago, who never once left me. Intending to ſail next morning, I made up a preſent for the old king, and carried it on ſhore in the evening. As ſoon as I landed, I was told by the officers who were on ſhore, that a far greater man than any we had yet ſeen was come to pay us a viſit. Mr. Pickerſgill informed me that he had ſeen him in the country, and found that he was a man of ſome conſequence, by the extraordinary reſpect paid him by the people. Some, when they approached him, fell on their faces, and put their head between their feet; and no one durſt paſs him without permiſſion. Mr. Pickerſgill, and another of the gentlemen, took hold of his arms, and conducted him down to the landing-place, where I found him ſeated with ſo much ſullen and ſtupid gravity, that notwithſtanding what had been told me, I really took him for an ideot, whom the people, from ſome ſuperſtitious notions, were ready to worſhip. I ſaluted and ſpoke to him; but he neither anſwered, nor took the leaſt notice of me; nor did he alter a ſingle feature in his countenance. This

confirmed

confirmed me in my opinion, and I was juſt going to leave him, when one of the natives, an intelligent youth, undertook to undeceive me; which he did in ſuch a manner as left me no room to doubt that he was the king, or principal man on the iſland. Accordingly I made him the preſent I intended for the old chief, which conſiſted of a ſhirt, an ax, a piece of red cloth, a looking-glaſs, ſome nails, medals, and beads. He received theſe things, or rather ſuffered them to be put upon him, and laid down by him, without loſing a bit of his gravity, ſpeaking one word, or turning his head either to the right or left; ſitting the whole time like a ſtatue; in which ſituation I left him, to return on board and he ſoon after retired. I had not been long on board before word was brought me that a quantity of proviſions had come from this chief. A boat was ſent to bring it from the ſhore; and it conſiſted of about twenty baſkets of roaſted bananoes, four bread and yams, and a roaſted pig of about twenty pounds weight. Mr. Edgcumbe and his party were juſt reimbarking, when theſe were brought to the water-ſide, and the bearers ſaid it was a preſent from the *Areeke*; that is the king of the iſland, to the *Areeke* of the ſhip. After this I was no longer to doubt the dignity of this ſullen chief.

1773. October. Wedneſ. 6.

Early in the morning of the 7th, while the ſhips were unmooring, I went aſhore with Captain Furneaux and Mr. Forſter, in order to make ſome return to the king for his laſt night's preſent. We no ſooner landed than we found Attago, of whom we inquired for the king, whoſe name was Kohaghee-too-Fallangou. He accordingly undertook to conduct us to him; but, whether he miſtook the man we wanted, or was ignorant where he was, I know not. Certain it is, that he took us a wrong road, in which he had not

Thurſday 7.

gone

1773. October. Thurſday 7.

gone far before he ſtopped; and after ſome little converſation between him and another man, we returned back, and preſently after, the king appeared with very few attendants. As ſoon as Attago ſaw him coming, he ſat down under a tree, and deſired us to do the ſame. The king ſeated himſelf on a riſing ground, about twelve or fifteen yards from us: here we ſat facing one another for ſome minutes. I waited for Attago to ſhew us the way; but ſeeing he did not riſe, Captain Furneaux and I got up, went and ſaluted the king, and ſat down by him. We then preſented him with a white ſhirt (which we put on his back) a few yards of red cloth, a braſs kettle, a ſaw, two large ſpikes, three looking-glaſſes, a dozen of medals, and ſome ſtrings of beads. All this time he ſat with the ſame ſullen ſtupid gravity as the day before; he even did not ſeem to ſee or know what we were about; his arms appeared immoveable at his ſides; he did not ſo much as raiſe them when we put on the ſhirt. I told him, both by words and ſigns, that we were going to leave his iſland; he ſcarcely made the leaſt anſwer to this, or any other thing, we either ſaid or did. We, therefore, got up and took leave; but I yet remained near him, to obſerve his actions. Soon after, he entered into converſation with Attago and an old woman, whom we took to be his mother. I did not underſtand any part of the converſation; it however made him laugh, in ſpite of his aſſumed gravity. I ſay aſſumed, becauſe it exceeded every thing of the kind I ever ſaw; and therefore think it could not be his real diſpoſition (unleſs he was an ideot indeed), as theſe iſlanders, like all the others we had lately viſited, have a great deal of levity; and he was in the prime of life. At laſt, he roſe up, and retired with his mother and two or three more.

1773. October. Thurſday 7.

Attago conducted us to another circle, where were ſeated the aged chief and ſeveral reſpectable old perſons of both ſexes; among whom was the prieſt, who was generally in company with this chief. We obſerved that this reverend father could walk very well in a morning; but, in an evening, was obliged to be led home by two people. By this we concluded, that the juice of the pepper-root had the ſame effect upon him, that wine and other ſtrong liquors have on Europeans who drink a large portion of them. It is very certain, that theſe old people ſeldom ſat down without preparing a bowl of this liquor; which is done in the ſame manner as at Ulietea. We, however, muſt do them the juſtice to believe, that it was meant to treat us: nevertheleſs, the greateſt part, if not the whole, generally fell to their ſhare. I was not well prepared to take leave of this chief, having exhauſted almoſt all our ſtore on the other. However, after rummaging our pockets, and treaſury bag, which was always carried with me wherever I went, we made up a tolerable preſent, both for him and his friends. This old chief had an air of dignity about him that commanded reſpect, which the other had not. He was grave, but not ſullen; would crack a joke, talk on indifferent ſubjects, and endeavour to underſtand us and be underſtood himſelf. During this viſit, the old prieſt repeated a ſhort prayer or ſpeech, the purport of which we did not underſtand. Indeed he would frequently, at other times, break out in prayer; but I never ſaw any attention paid to him by any one preſent. After a ſtay of near two hours, we took leave, and returned on board, with Attago and two or three more friends, who ſtaid and breakfaſted with us; after which they were diſmiſſed, loaded with preſents.

1773. October. Thurſday 7.

Attago was very importunate with me to return again to this iſle, and to bring with me cloth, axes, nails, &c. &c. telling me that I ſhould have hogs, fowls, fruit, and roots, in abundance. He particularly deſired me, more than once, to bring him ſuch a ſuit of clothes as I had on, which was my uniform. This good-natured iſlander was very ſerviceable to me, on many occaſions, during our ſhort ſtay. He conſtantly came on board every morning ſoon after it was light, and never quitted us till the evening. He was always ready, either on board or on ſhore, to do me all the ſervice in his power: his fidelity was rewarded at a ſmall expence; and I found my account in having ſuch a friend.

In heaving in the coaſting cable, it parted in the middle of its length, being chaffed by the rocks. By this accident we loſt the other half, together with the anchor, which lay in forty fathoms water, without any buoy to it. The beſt bower cable ſuffered alſo by the rocks; by which a judgment may be formed of this anchorage. At ten o'clock we got under ſail; but as our decks were much encumbered with fruit, &c. we kept plying under the land till they were cleared. The ſupplies we got at this iſle were about one hundred and fifty pigs, twice that number of fowls, as many bananoes and cocoa-nuts as we could find room for, with a few yams; and had our ſtay been longer, we, no doubt, might have got a great deal more. This, in ſome degree, ſhews the fertility of the iſland, of which, together with the neighbouring one of Middleburg, I ſhall now give a more particular account.

CHAP.

CHAP. III.

A Deſcription of the Iſlands and their Produce, with the Cultivation, Houſes, Canoes, Navigation, Manufactures, Weapons, Cuſtoms, Government, Religion, and Language of the Inhabitants.

THESE iſlands were firſt diſcovered by Captain Taſman in January 1642-3; and, by him, called Amſterdam and Middleburg. But the former is called by the natives Ton-ga-ta-bu, and the latter Ea-oo-wee. They are ſituated between the latitude of 21° 29′ and 21° 3′ South, and between the longitude of 174° 40′ and 175° 15′ Weſt, deduced from obſervations made on the ſpot. 1773. October.

Middleburg, or Eaoowee, which is the ſouthernmoſt, is about ten leagues in circuit, and of a height ſufficient to be ſeen twelve leagues. The ſkirts of this iſle are moſtly taken up in the plantations; the S. W. and N. W. ſides eſpecially. The interior parts are but little cultivated, though very fit for cultivation. However, the want of it added greatly to the beauty of the iſle; for here are, agreeably diſperſed, groves of cocoa-nut and other trees, lawns covered with thick graſs, here and there plantations, and paths, leading to every part of the iſland in ſuch beautiful diſorder, as greatly enlivens the proſpect.

The anchorage, which I named Engliſh Road (being the firſt who anchored there), is on the N. W. ſide, in latitude 21° 20′ 30″ South. The bearing we took when at anchor,

1773. October.

already mentioned, together with the chart, will be more than ſufficient to find this anchorage. The bank is a coarſe ſand; it extends two miles from the land, and on it there is from twenty to forty fathoms water. The ſmall creek before it affords convenient landing for boats at all times of the tide; which here, as well as at the other iſlands, riſes about four or five feet, and is high-water on the full and change days about ſeven o'clock. The iſland of Tongatabu is ſhaped ſomething like an iſoſceles triangle, the longeſt ſides whereof are ſeven leagues each, and the ſhorteſt four. It lies nearly in the direction of E. S. E. and W. N. W.; is nearly all of an equal height, rather low, not exceeding ſixty or eighty feet above the level of the ſea. This iſland, and alſo that of Eaoowee, is guarded from the ſea by a reef of coral rocks extending out from the ſhore one hundred fathoms more or leſs. On this reef the force of the ſea is ſpent before it reaches the land or ſhore. Indeed, this is, in ſome meaſure, the ſituation of all the Tropical Iſles in this ſea that I have ſeen; and thus Nature has effectually ſecured them from the encroachments of the ſea, though many of them are mere points when compared to this vaſt ocean. Van Diemen's Road, where we anchored, is under the northweſt part of the iſland, between the moſt northern and weſtern points. There lies a reef of rocks without it, bearing N. W. by W., over which the ſea breaks continually. The bank does not extend more than three cables length from the ſhore; without that, is an unfathomable depth. The loſs of an anchor, and the damage our cables ſuſtained, are ſufficient proofs that the bottom is none of the beſt.

On the eaſt ſide of the north point of the iſland (as Mr. Gilbert, whom I ſent to ſurvey the parts, informed me), is a very

very ſnug harbour, of one mile or more in extent, wherein is ſeven, eight, and ten fathoms water, with a clean ſandy bottom. The channel, by which he went in and out, lies cloſe to the point, and has only three fathoms water; but he believes that farther to the N. E. is a channel with a much greater depth which he had not time to examine. Indeed, it would have taken up far more time than I could ſpare to have ſurveyed theſe parts minutely; as there lie a number of ſmall iſlots and reefs of rocks along the N. E. ſide of the iſland, which ſeemed to extend to the N. E. farther than the eye could reach. The iſland of Amſterdam or Tongotabu is wholly laid out in plantations, in which are planted ſome of the richeſt productions of nature; ſuch as bread-fruit, cocoa-nut trees, plantains, bananoes, ſhaddocks, yams, and ſome other roots, ſugar-cane, and a fruit like a nectarine, called by them *Fighega*, and at Otaheite *Ahuya*: In ſhort, here are moſt of the articles which the Society Iſlands produce, beſides ſome which they have not. Mr. Forſter tells me, that he not only found the ſame plants here, that are at Otaheite and the neighbouring iſles, but ſeveral others which are not to be met with there. And I probably have added to their ſtock of vegetables, by leaving with them an aſſortment of garden ſeeds, pulſe, &c. Bread-fruit here, as well as at all the other iſles, was not in ſeaſon; nor was this the time for roots and ſhaddocks. We got the latter only at Middleburg. 1773. October.

The produce and cultivation of this iſle is the ſame as at Amſterdam; with this difference, that a part only of the former is cultivated, whereas the whole of the latter is. The lanes or roads neceſſary for travelling, are laid out in ſo judicious a manner as to open a free and eaſy communication from one part of the iſland to the other. Here are

1773. October.

no towns or villages, moſt of the houſes are built in the plantations, with no other order than what conveniency requires; they are neatly conſtructed, but do not exceed thoſe in the other iſles. The materials of which they are built, are the ſame; and ſome little variation in the diſpoſition of the framing is all the difference in their conſtruction. The floor is a little raiſed, and covered with thick ſtrong mats; the ſame ſort of matting ſerves to incloſe them on the windward ſide, the other being open. They have little areas before the moſt of them, which are generally planted round with trees, or ſhrubs of ornament, whoſe fragrancy perfumes the very air in which they breathe. Their houſehold furniture conſiſts of a few wooden platters, cocoa-nut ſhells, and ſome neat wooden pillows ſhaped like four-footed ſtools or forms. Their common clothing, with the addition of a mat, ſerves them for bedding. We got from them two to three earthen veſſels, which were all we ſaw among them. One was in the ſhape of a bomb-ſhell, with two holes in it, oppoſite each other; the others were like pipkins, containing about five or ſix pints, and had been in uſe on the fire. I am of opinion they are the manufacture of ſome other iſle; for, if they were of their own, we ought to have ſeen more of them. Nor am I to ſuppoſe they came from Taſman's ſhips; the time is too long for brittle veſſels like theſe to be preſerved.

We ſaw no other domeſtic animals amongſt them but hogs and fowls. The former are of the ſame ſort as at the other iſles in this ſea; but the latter are far ſuperior, being as large as any we have in Europe, and their fleſh equally good, if not better. We ſaw no dogs, and believe they have none, as they were exceedingly deſirous of thoſe we had on board.

My

A Draught, Plan & Section of an Amsterdam Canoe, *seen in the South Seas; shewing two in the Plan, their Distan*

Length
Breadth
Depth a
of the D

References to the Sections.

A { *The form of the Body with Stanhions supporting the Deck at the Fore and Aft parts.*
B *The Cross pieces of the Deck*
C *The Deck*
D { *The form of the Body at the Midship part of the Canoe*
E { *Several Sections shewing the form of the Body at the spacing of the Timbers as named on the Sheer Draught*

Publish

from out to outside being 13. 9 secured with Beams and Fore & Aft pieces of Timber lashed together with Mats made of Cocoa Nut Bass.

Dimensions.

	ft.	in.
Length	69	0
Breadth	3	10
Depth { in Midships	3	3

References to the Sheer Draught.

A The Deck or Platform
B The Hatchway
C Bulkheads secured to keep the water from the Midship part of the Canoe
D Beams of the Deck
E Topside which is birth'd up to the Deck
F Timbers or Riders
G A Clamp wrought Fore & Aft for the Beams of the Deck or Platform to Lodge in
H Pillars which support the Deck

References to the Pla.

a a The Canoes
b, b Beams athwart
C C Fore & Aft pieces of Timb.
D Hatchways
E Step of the Mast

In the Plan.

The outside of the Cross pieces of the Out Jigger from the outside of the Canoe } ft. 3. in. 3
Spread of the Out Jiggers at the ends 7 6
eeeee little Knobs where white shells are fixt

A Canoe with an Out Jigger.

	ft.	in.
Lenght	30.	0
Breadth { in Midships	1.	8
Depth { in Midships	1.	6

In the Sections.

A Shews the form of the Body at several Sections
B Shews a leg of Wood put at the ends of the Out Jiggers to Counter ballance & preventing the Canoes overseting
C Shews the form of the Body in Midships

Publ.d 1.st 1777 by Wm Strahan in New Street Shoe Lane & Thos Cadell in the Strand London.

W. Palmer sculp

N.o XVI

My friend Attago was complimented with a dog and a bitch, the one from New Zealand, the other from Ulietea. The name of a dog with them is *kooree* or *gooree*, the ſame as at New Zealand, which ſhews that they are not wholly ſtrangers to them. We ſaw no rats in theſe iſles, nor any other wild quadrupeds except ſmall lizards. The land birds are pigeons, turtle-doves, parrots, parroquets, owls, bald couts with a blue plumage, a variety of ſmall birds, and large bats in abundance. The produce of the ſea we know but little of; it is reaſonable to ſuppoſe that the ſame ſorts of fiſh are found here as at the other iſles. Their fiſhing inſtruments are the ſame; that is, hooks made of mother of pearl, gigs with two, three, or more prongs, and nets made of a very fine thread, with the meſhes wrought exactly like ours. But nothing can be a more demonſtrative evidence of their ingenuity than the conſtruction and make of their canoes, which, in point of neatneſs and workmanſhip, exceed every thing of this kind we ſaw in this ſea. They are built of ſeveral pieces ſewed together with bandage, in ſo neat a manner, that on the outſide it is difficult to ſee the joints. All the faſtenings are on the inſide, and paſs through kants or ridges, which are wrought on the edges and ends of the ſeveral boards which compoſe the veſſel, for that purpoſe. They are of two kinds, viz. double and ſingle; and the dimenſions and conſtruction of each will be beſt ſeen in the annexed plan. The ſingle ones are from twenty to thirty feet long, and about twenty or twenty-two inches broad in the middle; the ſtern terminates in a point, and the head ſomething like the point of a wedge. At each end is a kind of deck, for about one third part of the whole length, and open in the middle. In ſome the middle of the deck is decorated with a row of white ſhells, ſtuck on little pegs wrought out

1773. October.

of

1773. October.

of the ſame piece which compoſes it. Theſe ſingle canoes have all out-riggers, and are ſometimes navigated with ſails, but more generally with paddles, the blades of which are ſhort, and broadeſt in the middle. The two veſſels which compoſe the double canoe are each about ſixty or ſeventy feet long, and four or five broad in the middle; and each end terminates nearly in a point; ſo that the body or hull differs a little in conſtruction from the ſingle canoe; but is put together exactly in the ſame manner; theſe having a riſing in the middle round the open part, in the form of a long trough, which is made of boards, cloſely fitted together, and well ſecured to the body of the veſſel. Two ſuch veſſels are faſtened to, and parallel to each other, about ſix or ſeven feet aſunder, by ſtrong croſs beams, ſecured by bandages to the upper part of the riſings above mentioned. Over theſe beams and others, which are ſupported by ſtanchions fixed on the bodies of the canoes, is laid a boarded platform. All the parts which compoſe the double canoe, are made as ſtrong and light as the nature of the work will admit, and may be immerged in water to the very platform, without being in danger of filling. Nor is it poſſible, under any circumſtance whatever, for them to ſink, ſo long as they hold together. Thus they are not only made veſſels of burden, but fit for diſtant navigation. They are rigged with one maſt, which ſteps upon the platform, and can eaſily be raiſed or taken down; and are ſailed with a latteen-ſail, or triangular one, extended by a long yard, which is a little bent or crooked. The ſail is made of mats; the rope they make uſe of is laid exactly like ours, and ſome of it is four or five inch. On the platform is built a little ſhed or hut, which ſcreens the crew from the ſun and weather, and ſerves for other purpoſes. They alſo carry a moveable fire-hearth, which

which is a ſquare, but ſhallow trough of wood, filled with ſtones. The way into the hold of the canoe is from off the platform, down a ſort of uncovered hatchway, in which they ſtand to bail out the water. I think theſe veſſels are navigated either end foremoſt, and that, in changing tacks, they have only occaſion to ſhift or jib round the ſail; but of this I was not certain, as I had not then ſeen any under ſail, or with the maſt and ſail an end, but what were a conſiderable diſtance from us. 1773. October.

Their working tools are made of ſtone, bone, ſhells, &c. as at the other iſlands. When we view the work which is performed with theſe tools, we are ſtruck with admiration at the ingenuity and patience of the workman. Their knowledge of the utility of iron was no more than ſufficient to teach them to prefer nails to beads, and ſuch trifles; ſome, but very few, would exchange a pig for a large nail, or a hatchet. Old jackets, ſhirts, cloth, and even rags, were in more eſteem than the beſt edge-tool we could give them; conſequently they got but few axes from us but what were given as preſents. But if we include the nails which were given by the officers and crews of both ſhips for curioſities, &c. with thoſe given for refreſhments, they cannot have got leſs than five hundred weight, great and ſmall. The only piece of iron we ſaw among them was a ſmall broad awl, which had been made of a nail.

Both men and women are of a common ſize with Europeans; and their colour is that of a lightiſh copper, and more uniformly ſo than amongſt the inhabitants of Otaheite and the Society Iſles. Some of our gentlemen were of opinion theſe were a much handſomer race; others maintained a contrary opinion, of which number I was one. Be this as

1773. October.

it may, they have a good ſhape, and regular features, and are active, briſk, and lively. The women, in particular, are the merrieſt creatures I ever met with, and will keep chattering by one's ſide, without the leaſt invitation, or conſidering whether they are underſtood, provided one does but ſeem pleaſed with them. In general they appeared to be modeſt; although there was no want of thoſe of a different ſtamp; and as we had yet ſome venereal complaints on board, I took all poſſible care to prevent the diſorder being communicated to them. Upon moſt occaſions they ſhewed a ſtrong propenſity to pilfering; in which they were full as expert as the Otaheiteans.

Their hair in general is black, but more eſpecially that of the women. Different colours were found among the men, ſometimes on the ſame head, cauſed by ſomething they put upon it, which ſtains it white, red, and blue. Both ſexes wear it ſhort; I ſaw but two exceptions to this cuſtom, and the moſt of them combed it upwards. Many of the boys had it cut very cloſe, except a ſingle lock on the top of the head, and a ſmall quantity on each ſide. The men cut or ſhave their beards quite cloſe, which operation is performed with two ſhells. They have fine eyes, and in general good teeth, even to an advanced age. The cuſtom of *tattowing* or puncturing the ſkin prevails. The men are *tattowed* from the middle of the thigh to above the hips. The women have it only on their arms and fingers; and there but very ſlightly.

The dreſs of both ſexes conſiſts of a piece of cloth, or matting, wrapped round the waiſt, and hanging down below the knees. From the waiſt, upwards, they are generally naked; and it ſeemed to be a cuſtom to anoint theſe parts every morning.

morning. My friend Attago never failed to do it; but whether out of reſpect to his friend, or from cuſtom, I will not pretend to ſay; though I rather think from the latter, as he was not ſingular in the practice. 1773. October.

Their ornaments are amulets, necklaces, and bracelets of bones, ſhells, and beads of mother of pearl, tortoiſe-ſhell, &c. which are worn by both ſexes. The women alſo wear on their fingers neat rings made of tortoiſe-ſhell, and pieces in their ears about the ſize of a ſmall quill; but ear ornaments are not commonly worn, though all have their ears pierced. They have alſo a curious apron made of the outſide fibres of the cocoa-nut ſhell, and compoſed of a number of ſmall pieces ſewed together in ſuch manner as to form ſtars, half-moons, little ſquares, &c. It is ſtudded with beads of ſhells, and covered with red feathers, ſo as to have a pleaſing effect. They make the ſame kind of cloth, and of the ſame materials, as at Otaheite; though they have not ſuch a variety, nor do they make any ſo fine; but, as they have a method of glazing it, it is more durable, and will reſiſt rain for ſome time, which Otaheite cloth will not. Their colours are black, brown, purple, yellow, and red; all made from vegetables. They make various ſorts of matting; ſome of a very fine texture, which is generally uſed for clothing; and the thick and ſtronger ſort ſerves to ſleep on, and to make ſails for their canoes, &c. Among other uſeful utenſils, they have various ſorts of baſkets; ſome made of the ſame materials as their mats; and others of the twiſted fibres of cocoa-nuts. Theſe are not only durable but beautiful; being generally compoſed of different colours, and ſtudded with beads made of ſhells or bones. They have many little nick-nacks amongſt them; which ſhews

1773. October.

that they neither want taſte to deſign, nor ſkill to execute, whatever they take in hand.

How theſe people amuſe themſelves in their leiſure hours, I cannot ſay, as we are but little acquainted with their diverſions. The women frequently entertained us with ſongs, in a manner which was agreeable enough. They accompany the muſic by ſnapping their fingers, ſo as to keep time to it. Not only their voices, but their muſic was very harmonious, and they have a conſiderable compaſs in their notes. I ſaw but two muſical inſtruments amongſt them. One was a large flute made of a piece of bamboo, which they fill with their noſes as at Otaheite; but theſe have four holes or ſtops, whereas thoſe of Otaheite have only two. The other was compoſed of ten or eleven ſmall reeds of unequal lengths, bound together ſide by ſide, as the Doric pipe of the ancients is ſaid to have been; and the open ends of the reeds into which they blow with their mouths, are of equal height or in a line. They have alſo a drum which, without any impropriety, may be compared to an hollow log of wood. The one I ſaw was five feet ſix inches long, and thirty inches in girt, and had a ſlit in it, from the one end to the other, about three inches wide, by means of which it had been hollowed out. They beat on the ſide of this log with two drum-ſticks, and produce an hollow ſound, not quite ſo muſical as that of an empty caſk.

The common method of ſaluting one another is by touching or meeting noſes, as is done in New Zealand; and their ſign of peace to ſtrangers, is the diſplaying a white flag or flags; at leaſt ſuch were diſplayed to us, when we firſt drew near the ſhore. But the people who came firſt on board brought with them ſome of the pepper plant, and ſent

it

it before them into the ſhip; a ſtronger ſign of friendſhip than which one could not wiſh for. From their unſuſpicious manner of coming on board, and of receiving us at firſt on ſhore, I am of opinion, they are ſeldom diſturbed by either foreign or domeſtic troubles. They are, however, not unprovided with very formidable weapons; ſuch as clubs and ſpears, made of hard wood, alſo bows and arrows. The clubs are from three to five feet in length, and of various ſhapes, as is repreſented in the plate. Their bows and arrows are but indifferent; the former being very ſlight, and the latter only made of a ſlender reed pointed with hard wood. Some of their ſpears have many barbs, and muſt be very dangerous weapons where they take effect. On the inſide of the bow is a groove, in which is put the arrow; from which it ſhould ſeem that they uſe but one. 1773. October.

They have a ſingular cuſtom of putting every thing you give them to their heads, by way of thanks as we conjectured. This manner of paying a compliment, is taught them from their very infancy; for when we gave things to little children, the mother lifted up the child's hand to its head. They alſo uſed this cuſtom in their exchanges with us; whatever we gave them for their goods, was always applied to the head, juſt as if it had been given them for nothing. Sometimes they would look at our goods, and, if not approved, return them back; but whenever they applied them to the head, the bargain was infallibly ſtruck. When I had made a preſent to the chief of any thing curious, I frequently ſaw it handed from one to another; and every one, into whoſe hands it came, put it to the head. Very often the women would take hold of my hand, kiſs it, and lift it to their heads. From all this it ſhould ſeem, that this cuſtom,

which

1773. October. which they call *fagafatie*, has various ſignifications according as it is applied; all however complimentary.

It muſt be obſerved that the ſullen chief or king did not pay me any of theſe compliments for the preſents I made him.

A ſtill more ſingular cuſtom prevails in theſe iſles: We obſerved that the greater part of the people, both men and women, had loſt one, or both their little fingers *. We endeavoured, but in vain, to find out the reaſon of this mutilation; for no one would take any pains to inform us. It was neither peculiar to rank, age, or ſex; nor is it done at any certain age, as I ſaw thoſe of all ages on whom the amputation had been juſt made; and, except ſome young children, we found few who had both hands perfect. As it was more common among the aged than the young, ſome of us were of opinion that it was occaſioned by the death of their parents, or ſome other near relation. But Mr. Wales one day met with a man, whoſe hands were both perfect, of ſuch an advanced age, that it was hardly poſſible his parents could be living. They alſo burn or make inciſions in their cheeks, near the cheek bone. The reaſon of this was equally unknown to us. In ſome, the wounds were quite freſh; in others, they could only be known by the ſcars, or colour of the ſkin. I ſaw neither ſick nor lame amongſt them; all appeared healthy, ſtrong and vigorous; a proof of the goodneſs of the climate in which they live.

I have frequently mentioned a King, which implies the government being in a ſingle perſon, without knowing for certain whether it is ſo or no. Such an one was, however,

* This cuſtom is not peculiar to the inhabitants of the Friendly Iſles. See Recherches Philoſophiques ſur les Americains, tom. ii. p. 253, &c.

pointed out to us; and we had no reaſon to doubt it. From this, and other circumſtances, I am of opinion that this government is much like that of Otaheite: that is, in a king or great chief, who is here called Areeke, with other chiefs under him, who are lords of certain diſtricts, and perhaps ſole proprietors, to whom the people ſeem to pay great obedience. I alſo obſerved a third rank, who had not a little authority over the common people; my friend Attago was one of theſe. I am of opinion that all the land on *Tongatabu* is private property, and that there are here, as at Otaheite, a ſet of people, who are ſervants or ſlaves, and have no property in land. It is unreaſonable to ſuppoſe every thing in common in a country ſo highly cultivated as this. Intereſt being the greateſt ſpring which animates the hand of induſtry, few would toil in cultivating and planting the land, if they did not expect to reap the fruit of their labour: were it otherwiſe, the induſtrious man would be in a worſe ſtate than the idle ſluggard. I frequently ſaw parties of ſix, eight, or ten people, bring down to the landing-place, fruit and other things to diſpoſe of, where one perſon, a man or woman, ſuperintended the ſale of the whole; no exchanges were made but with his or her conſent; and, whatever we gave in exchange, was always given them, which, I think, plainly ſhewed them to be the owners of the goods, and the others no more than ſervants. Though benevolent Nature has been very bountiful to theſe iſles, it cannot be ſaid that the inhabitants are wholly exempt from the curſe of our forefathers: part of their bread muſt be earned with the ſweat of their brows. The high ſtate of cultivation their lands are in, muſt have coſt them immenſe labour. This is now amply rewarded by the great produce, of which every one ſeems to partake. No one wants the common neceſſaries of life; joy and contentment are painted in every face.

1773. October.

Indeed,

1773. October. Indeed, it can hardly be otherwiſe; an eaſy freedom prevails among all ranks of people; they feel no wants which they do not enjoy the means of gratifying; and they live in a clime where the painful extremes of heat and cold are equally unknown. If Nature has been wanting in any thing, it is in the article of freſh water, which, as it is ſhut up in the bowels of the earth, they are obliged to dig for. A running ſtream was not ſeen, and but one well, at Amſterdam. At Middleburg, we ſaw no water, but what the natives had in veſſels; but, as it was ſweet and cool, I had no doubt of its being taken up upon the iſland; and, probably, not far from the ſpot where I ſaw it.

So little do we know of their religion, that I hardly dare mention it. The buildings called *Aſiatoucas*, before mentioned, are undoubtedly ſet apart for this purpoſe. Some of our gentlemen were of opinion, that they were merely burying-places. I can only ſay, from my own knowledge, that they are places to which particular perſons directed ſet ſpeeches, which I underſtood to be prayers, as hath been already related. Joining my opinion with that of others, I was inclined to think that they are ſet apart to be both temples and burying-places, as at Otaheite, or even in Europe. But I have no idea of the images being idols; not only from what I ſaw myſelf, but from Mr. Wales's informing me that they ſet one of them up, for him and others to ſhoot at.

One circumſtance ſhewed that theſe *Aſiatoucas* were frequently reſorted to, for one purpoſe or other. The areas, or open places, before them, being covered with a green ſod, the graſs on which was very ſhort. This did not appear to have been cut, or reduced by the hand of man, but to have been prevented in its growth, by being often trod, or ſat upon.

It

1773. October.

It cannot be ſuppoſed that we could know much, either of their civil or religious policy, in ſo ſhort a time as four or five days, eſpecially as we underſtood but little of their language; even the two iſlanders we had on board could not at firſt underſtand them; and yet as we became the more acquainted with them, we found their language was nearly the ſame ſpoken at Otaheite and the Society Iſles. The difference not being greater than what we find betwixt the moſt northern and weſtern parts of England, as will more fully appear by the vocabulary.

CHAP IV.

Paſſage from Amſterdam to Queen Charlotte's Sound, with an Account of an Interview with the Inhabitants, and the final Separation of the two Ships.

ABOUT the time we were in a condition to make ſail, a canoe, conducted by four men, came along-ſide, with one of thoſe drums already mentioned, on which one man kept continually beating; thinking, no doubt, the muſic would charm us. I gave them a piece of cloth, and a nail, for the drum; and took the opportunity to ſend to my friend Attago ſome wheat, peaſe, and beans, which I had forgot to give him when he had the other ſeeds. As ſoon as this canoe was gone, we made ſail to the ſouthward, having a gentle gale at S. E. by E.; it being my intention to proceed directly to Queen Charlotte's Sound in New Zealand, there to take in wood and water, and then to go on farther diſcoveries to the South and Eaſt. Thurſday 7.

1773. October. Friday 8. In the afternoon on the 8th, we made the iſland of Pilſtart, bearing S. W. by W. ½ W., diſtant ſeven or eight leagues. This iſland, which was alſo diſcovered by Taſman, is ſituated in the latitude of 22° 26′ South, longitude 175° 59′ Weſt, and lies in the direction of S. 52° Weſt, diſtant thirty-two leagues from the ſouth end of Middleburg. It is more conſpicuous in height than circuit; having in it two conſiderable hills, ſeemingly disjoined from each other by a low valley. After a few hours calm the wind came to S. W.; with which we ſtretched to the S. E.; but, on the 10th, it veered round by the South to the S. E. and E. S. E. and then we reſumed our courſe to the S. S. W.

Thurſday 21. At five o'clock in the morning of the 21ſt, we made the land of New Zealand extending from N. W. by N. to W. S. W.; at noon, Table Cape bore Weſt, diſtant eight or ten leagues. I was very deſirous of having ſome intercourſe with the natives of this country as far to the north as poſſible; that is about Poverty or Tolaga Bays, where I apprehended they were more civilized than at Queen Charlotte's Sound; in order to give them ſome hogs, fowls, ſeeds, roots, &c. which I had provided for the purpoſe. The wind veering to the N. W. and North, enabled us to fetch in with the land a little to the north of Portland, and we ſtood as near the ſhore as we could with ſafety. We obſerved ſeveral people upon it, but none attempted to come off to us. Seeing this, we bore away under Portland, where we lay to ſome time, as well to give time for the natives to come off, as to wait for the Adventure. There were ſeveral people on Portland, but none ſeemed inclined to come to us; indeed the wind, at this time, blew rather too freſh for them to make the attempt. Therefore as ſoon as the Adventure was up with us, we made ſail for Cape Kidnappers, which we

paſſed

paſſed at five o'clock in the morning, and continued our courſe along-ſhore till nine, when, being about three leagues ſhort of Black-head, we ſaw ſome canoes put off from the ſhore. Upon this I brought to, in order to give them time to come on board; but ordered the Adventure, by ſignal, to ſtand on, as I was willing to loſe as little time as poſſible. 1773. October. Thurſday 21.

Thoſe in the firſt canoe, which came along-ſide, were fiſhers, and exchanged ſome fiſh for pieces of cloth and nails. In the next, were two men, whom, by their dreſs and behaviour, I took to be chiefs. Theſe two were eaſily prevailed on to come on board, when they were preſented with nails, and other articles. They were ſo fond of nails, as to ſeize on all they could find, and with ſuch eagerneſs, as plainly ſhewed they were the moſt valuable things we could give them. To the principal of theſe two men I gave the pigs, fowls, ſeeds, and roots. I believe, at firſt, he did not think I meant to give them to him; for he took but little notice of them, till he was ſatisfied they were for himſelf. Nor was he then in ſuch a rapture as when I gave him a ſpike-nail half the length of his arm. However, at his going away, I took notice, that he very well remembered how many pigs and fowls had been given him, as he took care to have them all collected together, and kept a watchful eye over them, leſt any ſhould be taken away. He made me a promiſe not to kill any; and if he keeps his word, and proper care is taken of them, there were enough to ſtock the whole iſland in due time; being two boars, two ſows, four hens, two cocks. The ſeeds were ſuch as are moſt uſeful (viz.) wheat, French and kidney beans, peaſe, cabbage, turnips, onions, carrots, parſnips, and yams, &c. With theſe articles

1773. October. Thurſday 21. they were diſmiſſed. It was evident theſe people had not forgot the Endeavour being on their coaſt; for the firſt words they ſpoke to us were, *Mataou no te pow pow* (we are afraid of the guns). As they could be no ſtrangers to the affair which happened off Cape Kidnapper in my former voyage, experience had taught them to have ſome regard to theſe inſtruments of death.

As ſoon as they were gone, we ſtretched off to the ſouthward, the wind having now veered to the W. S. W. In the afternoon it increaſed to a freſh gale, and blew in ſqualls; in one of which we loſt our fore-top-gallant maſt, having carried the ſail a little too long. The fear of loſing the land induced me to carry as much ſail as poſſible. At ſeven in the Friday 22. morning, we tacked and ſtretched in ſhore, Cape Turnagain, at this time, bore about N. W. $\frac{1}{2}$ N., diſtant ſix or ſeven leagues. The Adventure, being a good way to leeward, we ſuppoſed, did not obſerve the ſignal, but ſtood on; conſequently was ſeparated from us. During the night (which was ſpent in plying) the wind increaſed in ſuch a manner as to bring us under our courſes; it alſo veered to S. W. and S. S. W., and was attended with rain.

Saturday 23. At nine in the morning on the 23d, the ſky began to clear up, and the gale to abate, ſo that we could carry cloſe-reefed top-ſails. At eleven o'clock we were cloſe in with Cape Turnagain, when we tacked and ſtood off; at noon the ſaid Cape bore Weſt a little northerly, diſtant ſix or ſeven miles. Latitude obſerved 41° 30′ South. Soon after, the wind falling almoſt to a calm, and flattering ourſelves that it would be ſucceeded by one more favourable, we got up another top-gallant-maſt, rigged top-gallant-yards, and looſed all the reefs out of the top-ſails. The event was not equal

to

our wiſhes. The wind, indeed, came ſomething more favourable, that is, at W. by N., with which we ſtretched along ſhore to the ſouthward; but it ſoon increaſed in ſuch a manner, as to undo what we had but juſt done, and at laſt ſtripped us to our courſes, and two cloſe-reefed top-ſails, under which ſails we continued all night. About day-light the next morning, the gale abating, we were again tempted to looſe out the reefs, and rig top-gallant-yards, which proved all loſt labour; for, by nine o'clock, we were reduced to the ſame ſail as before. Soon after, the Adventure joined us; and at noon Cape Palliſer bore Weſt, diſtant eight or nine leagues. This Cape is the northern point of Eaheinomauwe. We continued to ſtretch to the ſouthward till midnight, when the wind abated and ſhifted to S. E. Three hours after, it fell calm, during which we looſed the reefs out, with the vain hopes that the next wind which came would be favourable. We were miſtaken; the wind only took this ſhort repoſe, in order to gain ſtrength, and fall the heavier upon us. For, at five o'clock in the morning, being the 25th, a gale ſprung up at N. W. with which we ſtretched to S. W. Cape Palliſer, at this time, bore N. N. W. diſtant eight or nine leagues. The wind increaſed in ſuch a manner, as obliged us to take in one reef after another; and, at laſt, it came on with ſuch fury, as made it neceſſary to take in all our ſails with the utmoſt expedition, and to lie to under bare poles. The ſea roſe in proportion with the wind; ſo that we had a terrible gale, and a mountainous ſea to encounter. Thus, after beating up againſt a hard gale for two days, and arriving juſt in ſight of our port, we had the mortification to be driven off from the land by a furious ſtorm. Two favourable circumſtances attended it, which gave us ſome

1773. October. Saturday 23. Sunday 24. Monday 25.

conſolation;

1773. October. Monday 25. conſolation; it was fair over head, and we were not apprehenſive of a lee-ſhore.

The ſtorm continued all the day without the leaſt intermiſſion. In the evening we bore down to look for the Adventure, ſhe being out of ſight to leeward, and after running the diſtance we ſuppoſed her to be off, brought to again without ſeeing her; it being ſo very hazy and thick in the horizon, that we could not ſee a mile round us, occaſioned by the ſpray of the ſea being lifted up to a great height by the force of the wind. At midnight the gale abated; ſoon after fell little wind; and at laſt ſhifted to S. W., when we wore, ſet the courſes and top-ſails cloſe-reefed, and ſtood in for the land. Soon after the wind freſhened and fixed at South; but as the Adventure was ſome diſtance a-ſtern, we lay by for Tueſday 26. her till eight o'clock, when we both made all ſail and ſteered N. by W. $\frac{1}{2}$ W. for the Strait. At noon obſerved in 42° 27′ South, Cape Palliſer, by judgment, bore North, diſtant ſeventeen leagues. This favourable wind was not of ſufficient duration; in the afternoon it fell, by little and little, and at length to a calm; this at ten o'clock was ſucceeded by a freſh breeze from the North, with which we ſtretched to the weſtward.

Wedneſ 27. At three o'clock next morning, we were pretty well in with Cape Campbell on the Weſt ſide of the Strait, when we tacked, and ſtretched over for Cape Palliſer, under courſes and cloſe reefed top-ſails, having the wind at N. W., a very ſtrong gale and fair weather. At noon, we tacked and ſtretched to S. W., with the laſt mentioned Cape bearing Weſt, diſtant four or five leagues. In the afternoon, the gale increaſed in ſuch a manner as brought us under our courſes.

We continued to ſtretch to the S. W. till midnight, when we wore, and ſet cloſe-reefed top-ſails. 1773. October.

On the 28th, at eight o'clock in the morning, we wore, and ſtood again to the S. W. till noon, when we were obliged to lie to under the fore-ſail. At this time the high land over Cape Campbell bore Weſt, diſtant ten or twelve leagues. The Adventure four or five miles to leeward. In the afternoon the fury of the gale began to abate; when we ſet the main-ſail, cloſe-reefed main-top-ſail, and ſtood to the northward with the wind at W. N. W. and W. by N. a ſtrong gale, attended with heavy ſqualls. Thurſday 28.

In the morning of the 29th, the wind abated and ſhifted to S. W. a gentle gale. Of this we took immediate advantage, ſet all our ſails, and ſtood for Cape Palliſer, which at noon bore W. by N. $\frac{1}{2}$ N., diſtant about ſix leagues. The wind continued between the S. W. and South till five in the evening, when it fell calm. At this time we were about three leagues from the Cape. At ſeven o'clock the calm was ſucceeded by a gentle breeze from N. N. E., as fair as we could wiſh; ſo that we began to reckon what time we ſhould reach the Sound the next day; but at nine the wind ſhifted to its old quarter N. W., and blew a freſh gale, with which we ſtretched to the S. W., under ſingle-reefed top-ſails and courſes with the Adventure in company. She was ſeen until midnight, at which time ſhe was two or three miles a-ſtern, and preſently after ſhe diſappeared; nor was ſhe to be ſeen at day-light. We ſuppoſed ſhe had tacked and ſtood to the N. E., by which manœuvre we loſt ſight of her. Friday 29. Saturday 30.

We continued to ſtretch to the weſtward with the wind at N. N. W., which increaſed in ſuch a manner as to bring us under our two courſes, after ſplitting a new main-topſail. At

noon

1773. October. Saturday 30. noon Cape Campbell bore W. by N., diſtant ſeven or eight leagues. At three in the afternoon the gale began to abate, and to veer more to the North, ſo that we fetched in with the land, under the Snowy mountains, about four or five leagues to windward of the Lookers-on, where there was the appearance of a large bay. I now regretted the loſs of the Adventure; for had ſhe been with me, I ſhould have given up all thoughts of going to Queen Charlotte's Sound to wood and water, and have ſought for a place to get theſe articles farther South, as the wind was now favourable for ranging along the coaſt. But our ſeparation made it neceſſary for me to repair to the Sound, that being the place of rendezvous.

As we approached the land we ſaw ſmoke in ſeveral places along the ſhore; a ſure ſign that the coaſt was inhabited. Our ſoundings were from forty-ſeven to twenty-five fathoms; that is, at the diſtance of three miles from the ſhore, forty-ſeven fathoms; and twenty-five fathoms at the diſtance of one mile, where we tacked, and ſtood to the eaſtward, under the two courſes and cloſe reefed top-ſails; but the latter we could not carry long, before we were obliged to hand them. We continued to ſtand to the eaſtward all night, in hopes of meeting with the Adventure in the morning.

Sunday 31. Seeing nothing of her then, we wore and brought to, under the fore-ſail and mizzen-ſtay-ſail, the wind having increaſed to a perfect ſtorm; but we had not been long in this ſituation before it abated, ſo as to permit us to carry the two courſes, under which we ſtood to the Weſt; and at noon the Snowy Mountains bore W. N. W., diſtant twelve or fourteen leagues. At ſix o'clock in the evening the wind quite ceaſed; but this proved only a momentary repoſe; for, preſently after, it began to blow with redoubled fury, and obliged us

to

to lie to under the mizzen ſtay-ſail; in which ſituation we continued till midnight, when the ſtorm leſſened; and two hours after it fell calm. 1773. October.

On the 1ſt of November, at four o'clock in the morning, the calm was ſucceeded by a breeze from the South. This ſoon after increaſed to a freſh gale, attended with hazy, rainy weather, which gave us hopes that the N. W. winds were done; for it muſt be obſerved, that they were attended with clear and fair weather. We were not wanting in taking immediate advantage of this favourable wind, by ſetting all our ſails, and ſteering for Cape Campbell, which at noon bore North, diſtant three or four leagues. At two o'clock, we paſſed the Cape, and entered the Strait with a briſk gale a-ſtern, and ſo likely to continue that we thought of nothing leſs than reaching our port the next morning. Once more we were to be deceived; at ſix o'clock, being off Cloudy Bay, our favourable wind was ſucceeded by one from the North, which ſoon after veered to N. W., and increaſed to a freſh gale. We ſpent the night plying; our tacks proved diſadvantageous; and we loſt more on the ebb than we gained on the flood. Next morning, we ſtretched over for the ſhore of Eaheinomauwe. At ſun-riſe the horizon being extraordinarily clear to leeward, we looked well out for the Adventure; but as we ſaw nothing of her, judged ſhe had got into the Sound. As we approached the above-mentioned ſhore, we diſcovered on the Eaſt ſide of Cape Teerawhitte, a new inlet I had never obſerved before. Being tired with beating againſt the N. W. winds, I reſolved to put into this place, if I found it practicable, or to anchor in the bay which lies before it. The flood being in our favour, after making a ſtretch off, we fetched under the Cape, and ſtretched into

November. Monday 1.

Tueſday 2.

1773. November. Tueſday 2. the bay along by the weſtern ſhore, having from thirty-five to twelve fathoms, the bottom every where good anchorage. At one o'clock we reached the entrance of the inlet juſt as the tide of ebb was making out; the wind being likewiſe againſt us, we anchored in twelve fathoms water, the bottom a fine ſand. The eaſternmoſt of the Black Rocks, which lie on the larboard ſide of the entrance of the inlet, bore N. by E., one mile diſtant; Cape Teerawhitte, or the Weſt point of the bay, Weſt, diſtant about two leagues; and the Eaſt point of the bay N. by E., four or five miles.

Soon after we had anchored, ſeveral of the natives came off in their canoes; two from one ſhore, and one from the other. It required but little addreſs to get three or four of them on board. Theſe people were extravagantly fond of nails above every other thing. To one man I gave two cocks and two hens, which he received with ſo much indifference, as gave me little hopes he would take proper care of them.

We had not been at anchor here above two hours, before the wind veered to N. E., with which we weighed; but the anchor was hardly at the bows before it ſhifted to South. With this we could but juſt lead out of the bay, and then bore away for the Sound under all the ſail we could ſet; having the advantage, or rather diſadvantage, of an increaſing gale, which already blew too hard. We hauled up into the Sound juſt at dark, after making two boards, in which moſt of our ſails were ſplit; and anchored in eighteen fathoms water, between the White Rocks and the N. W. ſhore.

Wedneſ. 3. The next morning the gale abated, and was ſucceeded by a few hours calm; after that a breeze ſprung up at N. W., with which we weighed and ran up into Ship Cove, where we did not find the Adventure as was expected.

CHAP.

CHAP. V.

Tranſactions in Queen Charlotte's Sound; with an Account of the Inhabitants being Cannibals; and various other Incidents.—Departure from the Sound, and our Endeavours to find the Adventure; with ſome Deſcription of the Coaſt.

THE firſt thing we did, after mooring the ſhip, was to unbend all the ſails; there not being one but what wanted repair. Indeed, both our ſails and rigging had ſuſtained much damage, in beating off the Strait's mouth. 1773. November. Wedneſ. 3.

We had no ſooner anchored than we were viſited by the natives, ſeveral of whom I remembered to have ſeen when I was here in the Endeavour, particularly an old man named Goubiah. In the afternoon, I gave orders for all the empty water caſks to be landed, in order to be repaired, cleaned, and filled, tents to be ſet up for the ſail-makers, coopers, and others, whoſe buſineſs made it neceſſary for them to be on ſhore. The next day we began to caulk the ſhip's ſides and decks, to over-haul her rigging, repair the ſails, cut wood for fewel, and ſet up the ſmith's forge to repair the iron-work; all of which were abſolutely neceſſary. We alſo made ſome hauls with the ſeine, but caught no fiſh; which deficiency the natives in ſome meaſure made up, by bringing us a good quantity, and exchanging them for pieces of Otaheitean cloth, &c. Thurſday 4.

1773. November. Friday 5.

On the 5th, the moſt part of our bread being in caſks, I ordered ſome to be opened, when, to our mortification, we found a good deal of it damaged. To repair this loſs in the beſt manner we could, all the caſks were opened; the bread was picked, and the copper oven ſet up, to bake ſuch parcels of it, as, by that means, could be recovered. Some time this morning, the natives ſtole, out of one of the tents, a bag of cloaths belonging to one of the ſeamen. As ſoon as I was informed of it, I went to them in an adjoining cove, demanded the cloaths again, and, after ſome time ſpent in friendly application, recovered them. Since we were among thieves, and had come off ſo well, I was not ſorry for what had happened, as it taught our people to keep a better look-out for the future.

With theſe people I ſaw the youngeſt of the two ſows Captain Furneaux had put on ſhore in Cannibal Cove, when we were laſt here: it was lame of one of its hind legs; otherwiſe in good caſe, and very tame. If we underſtood theſe people right, the boar and other ſow were alſo taken away and ſeparated, but not killed. We were likewiſe told that the two goats I had put on ſhore up the Sound, had been killed by that old raſcal Goubiah. Thus all our endeavours to ſtock this country with uſeful animals were likely to be fruſtrated by the very people we meant to ſerve. Our gardens had fared ſomewhat better. Every thing in them, except the potatoes, they had left entirely to Nature, who had acted her part ſo well, that we found moſt articles in a flouriſhing ſtate: a proof that the winter muſt have been mild. The potatoes had moſt of them been dug up; ſome, however, ſtill remained, and were growing, though I think it is probable they will never be got out of the ground.

Next morning I ſent over to the cove, where the natives reſide, to haul the ſeine; and took with me a boar, and a young ſow, two cocks and two hens, we had brought from the iſles. Theſe I gave to the natives, being perſuaded they would take proper care of them, by their keeping Captain Furneaux's ſow near five months; for I am to ſuppoſe it was caught ſoon after we ſailed. We had no better ſucceſs with the ſeine than before; nevertheleſs we did not return on board quite empty, having purchaſed a large quantity from the natives. When we were upon this traffic, they ſhewed a great inclination to pick my pockets, and to take away the fiſh with one hand, which they had juſt given me with the other. This evil one of the chiefs undertook to remove, and with fury in his eyes made a ſhew of keeping the people at a proper diſtance. I applauded his conduct, but at the ſame time kept ſo good a look-out, as to detect him in picking my pocket of an handkerchief; which I ſuffered him to put in his boſom before I ſeemed to know any thing of the matter, and then told him what I had loſt. He ſeemed quite ignorant and innocent, till I took it from him; and then he put it off with a laugh, acting his part with ſo much addreſs, that it was hardly poſſible for me to be angry with him; ſo that we remained good friends, and he accompanied me on board to dinner. About that time, we were viſited by ſeveral ſtrangers, in four or five canoes, who brought with them fiſh, and other articles, which they exchanged for cloth, &c. Theſe new-comers took up their quarters in a cove near us; but very early the next morning moved off with ſix of our ſmall water caſks; and with them all the people we found here on our arrival. This precipitate retreat of theſe laſt, we ſuppoſed, was owing to the theft the others had committed.

1773. November. Saturday 6.

Sunday 7.

1773. November. Sunday 7. mitted. They left behind them ſome of their dogs, and the boar I had given them the day before, which I now took back again as I had not another. Our caſks were the leaſt loſs we felt by theſe people leaving us: while they remained, we were generally well ſupplied with fiſh, at a ſmall expence.

Tueſday 9. We had fair weather, with the wind at N. E. on the 9th, which gave us ſome hopes of ſeeing the Adventure; but theſe hopes vaniſhed in the afternoon, when the wind ſhifted to the weſtward.

Wedneſ. 10. The next morning, our friends the natives returned again, and brought with them a quantity of fiſh which they exchanged for two hatchets.

Friday 12. Fair weather on the 12th, enabled us to finiſh picking, airing, and baking our biſcuit; four thouſand two hundred and ninety-two pounds of which we found totally unfit to eat; and about three thouſand pounds more could only be eaten by people in our ſituation.

Saturday 13. On the 13th, clear and pleaſant weather. Early in the morning, the natives brought us a quantity of fiſh, which they exchanged as uſual. But their greateſt branch of trade was the green talk or ſtone, called by them *Poenammoo*, a thing of no great value; nevertheleſs it was ſo much ſought after by our people, that there was hardly a thing they would not give for a piece of it.

Monday 15. The 15th being a pleaſant morning, a party of us went over to the Eaſt Bay, and climbed one of the hills which overlooked the eaſtern part of the Strait, in order to look for the Adventure. We had a fatiguing walk to little purpoſe; for when we came to the ſummit, we found the eaſtern

eaſtern horizon ſo foggy that we could not ſee above two miles. Mr. Forſter, who was one of the party, profited by this excurſion, in collecting ſome new plants. I now began to deſpair of ſeeing the Adventure any more; but was totally at a loſs to conceive what was become of her. Till now, I thought ſhe had put into ſome port in the Strait, when the wind came to N. W., the day we anchored in the cove, and waited to complete her water. This conjecture was reaſonable enough at firſt, but it was now hardly probable ſhe could be twelve days in our neighbourhood, without our either hearing or ſeeing ſomething of her. 1773. November. Monday 15.

The hill we now mounted is the ſame that I was upon in 1770, when I had the ſecond view of the Strait: we then built a tower, with the ſtones we found there, which we now ſaw had been levelled to the ground; no doubt by the natives, with a view of finding ſomething hid in it. When we returned from the hill, we found a number of them collected round our boat. After ſome exchanges, and making them ſome preſents, we embarked, in order to return on board; and, in our way, viſited others of the inhabitants, by whom we were kindly received.

Our friends the natives employed themſelves on the 17th in fiſhing in our neighbourhood; and, as faſt as they caught the fiſh, came and diſpoſed of them to us; inſomuch that we had more than we could make uſe of. From this day to the 22d nothing remarkable happened, and we were occupied in getting every thing in readineſs to put to ſea, being reſolved to wait no longer than the aſſigned time for the Adventure. Wedneſ. 17.

The winds were between the South and Weſt, ſtormy with rain till the 22d, when the weather became ſettled, clear, Monday 22.

1773. November. Monday 22.

clear, and pleaſant. Very early in the morning, we were viſited by a number of the natives, in four or five canoes, very few of whom we had ſeen before. They brought with them various articles (curioſities) which they exchanged for Otaheitean cloth, &c. At firſt, the exchanges were very much in our favour, till an old man, who was no ſtranger to us, came and aſſiſted his countrymen with his advice; which, in a moment, turned the trade above a thouſand per cent. againſt us.

After theſe people were gone, I took four hogs (that is three ſows and one boar), two cocks and two hens, which I landed in the bottom of the Weſt Bay; carrying them a little way into the woods, where we left them with as much food as would ſerve them ten or twelve days. This was done with a view of keeping them in the woods, leſt they ſhould come down to the ſhore in ſearch of food, and be diſcovered by the natives; which, however, ſeemed not probable, as this place had never been frequented by them; nor were any traces of them to be ſeen near it. We alſo left ſome cocks and hens in the woods in Ship Cove; but theſe will have a chance of falling into the hands of the natives, whoſe wandering way of life will hinder them from breeding, even ſuppoſe they ſhould be taken proper care of. Indeed, they took rather too much care of thoſe which I had already given them, by keeping them continually confined, for fear of loſing them in the woods. The ſow pig we had not ſeen, ſince the day they had her from me; but we were now told ſhe was ſtill living, as alſo the old boar and ſow given them by Captain Furneaux; ſo that there is reaſon to hope they may ſucceed. It will be unfortunate, indeed, if every method I have taken, to provide this country with uſeful animals, ſhould be fruſtrated. We were likewiſe told, that the two

goats were ſtill alive, and running about; but I gave more credit to the firſt ſtory than this. I ſhould have replaced them, by leaving behind the only two I had left, but had the misfortune to loſe the ram ſoon after our arrival here, in a manner we could hardly account for. They were both put aſhore at the tents, where they ſeemed to thrive very well: at laſt, the ram was taken with fits bordering on madneſs. We were at a loſs to tell whether it was occaſioned by any thing he had eaten, or by being ſtung with nettles, which were in plenty about the place; but ſuppoſed it to be the latter, and therefore did not take the care of him we ought to have done. One night, while he was lying by the centinel, he was ſeized with one of theſe fits, and ran headlong into the ſea; but ſoon came out again, and ſeemed quite eaſy. Preſently after, he was ſeized with another fit, and ran along the beach, with the ſhe-goat after him. Some time after, ſhe returned, but the other was never ſeen more. Diligent ſearch was made for him in the woods, to no purpoſe; we therefore ſuppoſed he had run into the ſea a ſecond time, and had been drowned. After this accident, it would have been in vain to leave the ſhe-goat as ſhe was not with kid; having kidded but a few days before we arrived, and the kids dead. Thus the reader will ſee how every method I have taken to ſtock this country with ſheep and goats, has proved ineffectual.

1773. November. Monday 22.

When I returned on board in the evening, I found our good friends the natives had brought us a large ſupply of fiſh. Some of the officers viſiting them at their habitations, ſaw, among them, ſome human thigh-bones, from which the fleſh had been but lately picked. This, and other circumſtances, led us to believe that the people, whom we took for ſtrangers this morning, were of the ſame tribe; that

1773. November. Monday 22.

they had been out on ſome war expedition; and that thoſe things they ſold us, were the ſpoils of their enemies. Indeed, we had ſome information of this ſort the day before; for a number of women and children came off to us in a canoe, from whom we learnt that a party of men were then out, for whoſe ſafety they were under ſome apprehenſion; but this report found little credit with us, as we ſoon after ſaw ſome canoes come in from fiſhing, which we judged to be them.

Having now got the ſhip in a condition for ſea, and to encounter the ſouthern latitudes, I ordered the tents to be ſtruck and every thing to be got on board.

The boatſwain, with a party of men, being in the woods cutting broom, ſome of them found a private hut of the natives, in which was depoſited moſt of the treaſure they had received from us, as well as ſome other articles of their own. It is very probable ſome were ſet to watch this hut; as, ſoon after it was diſcovered, they came, and took all away. But miſſing ſome things, they told our people they had ſtolen them; and, in the evening, came and made their complaint to me, pitching upon one of the party as the perſon who had committed the theft. Having ordered this man to be puniſhed before them, they went away ſeemingly ſatisfied; although they did not recover any of the things they had loſt, nor could I by any means find out what had become of them; though nothing was more certain than that ſomething had been ſtolen by ſome of the party, if not by the very man the natives had pitched upon. It was ever a maxim with me, to puniſh the leaſt crimes any of my people committed againſt theſe uncivilized nations. Their robbing us with impunity is, by no means, a ſufficient reaſon why we ſhould treat them in the ſame manner, a conduct, we ſee, they themſelves

themſelves cannot juſtify: they found themſelves injured, and ſought for redreſs in a legal way. The beſt method, in my opinion, to preſerve a good underſtanding with ſuch people, is, firſt, by ſhewing them the uſe of fire-arms, to convince them of the ſuperiority they give you over them, and then to be always upon your guard. When once they are ſenſible of theſe things, a regard for their own ſafety will deter them from diſturbing you, or from being unanimous in forming any plan to attack you; and ſtrict honeſty, and gentle treatment on your part, will make it their intereſt not to do it. 1773. November. Monday 22.

Calm or light airs from the North, all day, on the 23d, hindered us from putting to ſea as intended. In the afternoon, ſome of the officers went on ſhore to amuſe themſelves among the natives, where they ſaw the head and bowels of a youth, who had lately been killed, lying on the beach; and the heart ſtuck on a forked ſtick, which was fixed to the head of one of the largeſt canoes. One of the gentlemen bought the head, and brought it on board, where a piece of the fleſh was broiled and eaten by one of the natives, before all the officers, and moſt of the men. I was on ſhore at this time, but ſoon after returning on board, was informed of the above circumſtances; and found the quarter-deck crowded with the natives, and the mangled head, or rather part of it, (for the under jaw and lip were wanting) lying on the taſſeral. The ſcull had been broken on the left ſide, juſt above the temples; and the remains of the face had all the appearance of a youth under twenty. Tueſday 23.

The ſight of the head, and the relation of the above circumſtances, ſtruck me with horror, and filled my mind with indignation againſt theſe cannibals. Curioſity, however,

1773. November. Tueſday 23.

got the better of my indignation, eſpecially when I conſidered that it would avail but little, and being deſirous of becoming an eye-witneſs of a fact which many doubted, I ordered a piece of the fleſh to be broiled and brought to the quarter-deck, where one of theſe cannibals eat it with ſurpriſing avidity. This had ſuch an effect on ſome of our people as to make them ſick. Oedidee (who came on board with me (was ſo affected with the ſight as to become perfectly motionleſs, and ſeemed as if metamorphoſed into the ſtatue of Horror. It is utterly impoſſible for art to deſcribe that paſſion with half the force that it appeared in his countenance. When rouzed from this ſtate by ſome of us, he burſt into tears; continued to weep and ſcold by turns; told them they were vile men; and that he neither was, nor would be any longer their friend. He even would not ſuffer them to touch him; he uſed the ſame language to one of the gentlemen who cut off the fleſh; and refuſed to accept, or even touch, the knife with which it was done. Such was Oedidee's indignation againſt the vile cuſtom; and worthy of imitation by every rational being.

I was not able to find out the reaſon for their undertaking this expedition; all I could underſtand for certain was, that they went from hence into Admiralty Bay (the next inlet to the Weſt) and there fought with their enemies, many of whom they killed. They counted to me fifty; a number which exceeded probability, as they were not more, if ſo many, themſelves. I think I underſtood them clearly, that this youth was killed there; and not brought away priſoner, and afterwards killed. Nor could I learn that they had brought away any more than this one; which increaſed the improbability of their having killed ſo many. We had alſo

reaſon

reaſon to think that they did not come off without loſs; for a young woman was ſeen, more than once, to cut herſelf, as is the cuſtom when they loſe a friend or relation. 1773. November. Tueſday 23.

That the New Zealanders are cannibals, can now no longer be doubted. The account given of this in my former voyage, being partly founded on circumſtances, was, as I afterwards underſtood, diſcredited by many perſons. Few conſider what a ſavage man is in his natural ſtate, and even after he is, in ſome degree, civilized. The New Zealanders are certainly in ſome ſtate of civilization; their behaviour to us was manly and mild, ſhewing, on all occaſions, a readineſs to oblige. They have ſome arts among them which they execute with great judgment and unwearied patience; they are far leſs addicted to thieving than the other iſlanders of the South Sea; and, I believe, thoſe in the ſame tribe, or ſuch as are at peace one with another, are ſtrictly honeſt among themſelves. This cuſtom of eating their enemies ſlain in battle (for I firmly believe they eat the fleſh of no others) has, undoubtedly, been handed down to them from the earlieſt times; and we know it is not an eaſy matter to wean a nation from their ancient cuſtoms, let them be ever ſo inhuman and ſavage; eſpecially if that nation has no manner of connexion or commerce with ſtrangers. For it is by this that the greateſt part of the human race has been civilized; an advantage which the New Zealanders, from their ſituation, never had. An intercourſe with foreigners would reform their manners, and poliſh their ſavage minds. Or, were they more united under a ſettled form of government, they would have fewer enemies, conſequently this cuſtom would be leſs in uſe, and might in time be in a manner forgotten. At preſent, they have but little idea of treating others as themſelves would *wiſh* to be treated, but

1773. November. Tueſday 23.

treat them as they *expect* to be treated. If I remember right, one of the arguments they made uſe of to Tupia, who frequently expoſtulated with them againſt this cuſtom, was, that there could be no harm in killing and eating the man who would do the ſame by them, if it was in his power. For, ſaid they, " can there be any harm in eating our enemies, " whom we have killed in battle? Would not thoſe very " enemies have done the ſame to us?" I have often ſeen them liſten to Tupia with great attention; but I never found his arguments have any weight with them, or that, with all his rhetoric, he could perſuade any one of them that this cuſtom was wrong. And when Oedidee, and ſeveral of our people, ſhewed their abhorrence of it, they only laughed at them.

Among many reaſons which I have heard aſſigned for the prevalence of this horrid cuſtom, the want of animal food has been one; but how far this is deducible either from facts or circumſtances, I ſhall leave thoſe to find out who advanced it. In every part of New Zealand where I have been, fiſh was in ſuch plenty, that the natives generally caught as much as ſerved both themſelves and us. They have alſo plenty of dogs; nor is there any want of wild-fowl, which they know very well how to kill. So that neither this, nor the want of food of any kind, can, in my opinion, be the reaſon. But, whatever it may be, I think it was but too evident, that they have a great liking for this kind of food.

I muſt here obſerve, that Oedidee ſoon learnt to converſe with theſe people, as, I am perſuaded, he would have done with the people of Amſterdam, had he been a little longer with them; for he did not underſtand the New Zealanders, at firſt, any more, or not ſo much, as he underſtood the people of Amſterdam.

At

At four o'clock in the morning, on the 24th, we unmoored with an intent to put to ſea; but the wind being at North and N. E. without, and blowing ſtrong puffs into the cove, made it neceſſary for us to lie faſt. While we were unmooring, ſome of our old friends came on board to take their leave of us, and afterwards left the cove with all their effects; but thoſe who had been out on the late expedition remained; and ſome of the gentlemen having viſited them, found the heart ſtill ſticking on the canoe, and the inteſtines lying on the beach; but the liver and lungs were now wanting. Probably they had eaten them, after the carcaſe was all gone. 1773. November. Wedneſ. 24.

On the 25th, early in the morning, we weighed, with a ſmall breeze out of the cove, which carried us no farther than between Motuara and Long Iſland, where we were obliged to anchor; but, preſently after, a breeze ſpringing up at North, we weighed again, turned out of the Sound, and ſtood over for Cape Teerawhitte. Thurſday 25.

During our ſtay in the Sound, we were plentifully ſupplied with fiſh, procured from the natives at a very eaſy rate; and, beſides the vegetables our own gardens afforded, we found, every where, plenty of ſcurvy-graſs and cellery, which I cauſed to be dreſſed every day for all hands. By this means, they had been moſtly on a freſh diet for the three preceding months; and, at this time, we had neither a ſick nor ſcorbutic man on board. It is neceſſary to mention, for the information of others, that we had now ſome pork on board, ſalted at Ulietea, and as good as any I ever eat. The manner in which we cured it, was thus: In the cool of the evening the hogs were killed, dreſſed, cut up, the bones cut out, and the fleſh ſalted while it was yet hot. The next morning

1773. November. Thurſday 25.

morning we gave it a ſecond ſalting, packed it into a caſk, and put to it a ſufficient quantity of ſtrong pickle. Great care is to be taken that the meat be well covered with pickle, otherwiſe it will ſoon ſpoil.

The morning before we ſailed, I wrote a memorandum, ſetting forth the time we laſt arrived, the day we ſailed, the route I intended to take, and ſuch other information as I thought neceſſary for Captain Furneaux, in caſe he ſhould put into the Sound; and buried it in a bottle under the root of a tree in the garden, which is in the bottom of the cove, in ſuch a manner as muſt be found by him or any European who might put into the cove. I, however, had little reaſon to hope it would fall into the hands of the perſon for whom it was intended, thinking it hardly poſſible that the Adventure could be in any port in New Zealand, as we had not heard of her in all this time. Nevertheleſs I was reſolved not to leave the coaſt without looking for her, where I thought it moſt likely for her to be. It was with this view that I ſtood over for Cape Teerawhitte, and afterwards run along ſhore, from point to point, to Cape Palliſer, firing guns every half hour; but all to no effect. At eight o'clock we brought to for the night, Cape Palliſer bearing S. E. by E., diſtant three leagues; in which ſituation we had fifty fathoms water.

I had now an opportunity of making the following remarks on the coaſt between Cape Teerawhitte and Cape Palliſer. The bay which lies on the Weſt ſide of the laſt Cape, does not appear to run ſo far inland to the northward as I at firſt thought; the deception being cauſed by the land in the bottom of it being low: it is, however, at leaſt five leagues deep, and full as wide at the entrance. Though it

ſeems

ſeems to be expoſed to ſoutherly and S. W. winds, it is probable there may be places in the bottom of it, ſheltered even from theſe. The bay or inlet, on the Eaſt ſide of Cape Teerawhitte, before which we anchored, lies in North, inclining to the Weſt, and ſeemed to be ſheltered from all winds. The middle cape, or point of land that disjoins theſe two bays, riſes to a conſiderable height, eſpecially inland; for cloſe to the ſea is a ſkirt of low land, off which lie ſome pointed rocks, but ſo near to the ſhore as to be noways dangerous. Indeed, the navigation of this ſide of the Strait ſeems much ſafer than the other, becauſe the tides here are not near ſo ſtrong. Cape Teerawhitte and Cape Palliſer lie in the direction of N. 69° W., and S. 69° Eaſt, from each other diſtant ten leagues. The cape which disjoins the two bays above mentioned, lies within, or North of, this direction. All the land near the coaſt, between and about theſe capes, is exceedingly barren; probably owing to its being ſo much expoſed to the cold ſoutherly winds. From Cape Teerawhitte to the Two Brothers, which lie off Cape Koamoroo, the courſe is nearly N. W. by N., diſtant ſixteen miles. North of Cape Teerawhitte, between it and Entry Iſland, is an iſland lying pretty near the ſhore. I judged this to be an iſland when I ſaw it in my former voyage, but not being certain, left it undetermined in my chart of the Strait, which is the reaſon of my taking notice of it now, as alſo of the bays, &c. above-mentioned.

1773. November. Thurſday 25.

At day-light in the morning on the 26th, we made ſail round Cape Palliſer, firing guns as uſual, as we ran along the ſhore. In this manner we proceeded till we were three or four leagues to the N. E. of the cape, when the wind ſhifting to N. E., we bore away for Cape Campbell on the other ſide

Friday 26.

1773. November. Friday 26.

ſide of the Strait. Soon after, ſeeing a ſmoke aſcend, at ſome diſtance inland, away to the N. E., we hauled the wind, and continued to ply till ſix o'clock in the evening; which was ſeveral hours after the ſmoke diſappeared, and left us not the leaſt ſigns of people.

Every one being unanimouſly of opinion that the Adventure could neither be ſtranded on the coaſt, nor be in any of the harbours thereof, I gave up looking for her, and all thoughts of ſeeing her any more during the voyage; as no rendezvous was abſolutely fixed upon after leaving New Zealand. Nevertheleſs, this did not diſcourage me from fully exploring the ſouthern parts of the Pacific Ocean, in the doing of which I intended to employ the whole of the enſuing ſeaſon.

On our quitting the coaſt, and conſequently all hopes of being joined by our conſort, I had the ſatisfaction to find that not a man was dejected, or thought the dangers we had yet to go through, were in the leaſt increaſed by being alone; but as cheerfully proceeding to the South, or wherever I might think proper to lead them, as if the Adventure or even more ſhips had been in our company.

CHAP.

CHAP. VI.

Route of the Ship from New Zealand in Search of a Continent; with an Account of the various Obſtructions met with from the Ice, and the Methods purſued to explore the Southern Pacific Ocean.

AT eight o'clock in the evening of the 26th, we took our departure from Cape Palliſer, and ſteered to the South, inclining to the Eaſt, having a favourable gale from the N. W. and S. W. We daily ſaw ſome rock-weeds, ſeals, Port Egmont hens, albatroſſes, pintadoes, and other peterels; and on the 2d of December, being in the latitude of 48° 23′ South, longitude 179° 16′ Weſt, we ſaw a number of red bill'd penguins, which remained about us for ſeveral days. On the 5th, being in the latitude 50° 17′ South, longitude 179° 40′ Eaſt, the variation was 18° 25′ Eaſt. At half an hour paſt eight o'clock the next evening, we reckoned ourſelves antipodes to our friends in London, conſequently as far removed from them as poſſible.

1773. November. Friday 26.

December. Thurſday 2.

Sunday 5.

Monday 6.

On the 8th, being in latitude 55° 39′, longitude 178° 53′ Weſt, we ceaſed to ſee penguins and ſeals, and concluded that thoſe we had ſeen, retired to the ſouthern parts of New Zealand, whenever it was neceſſary for them to be at land. We had now a ſtrong gale at N. W., and a great ſwell from S. W. This ſwell we got as ſoon as the South point of New Zealand came in that direction; and as we had had no wind from that quarter the ſix preceding days, but, on the contrary, it had been at Eaſt, North, and N. W., I conclude

Wedneſ. 8.

1773. December. Wedneſ. 8. there can be no land to the ſouthward, under the meridian of New Zealand, but what muſt lie very far to the South. The two following days we had very ſtormy weather, ſleet and ſnow, winds between the North and South-weſt.

Saturday 11. The 11th, the ſtorm abated, and the weather clearing up we found the latitude to be 61° 15′ South, longitude 173° 4′ W. This fine weather was of ſhort duration: in the evening the wind increaſed to a ſtrong gale at S. W., blew in ſqualls attended with thick ſnow ſhowers, hail, and ſleet. The mercury in the thermometer fell to thirty-two; conſequently the weather was very cold, and ſeemed to indicate that ice was not far off.

Sunday 12. At four o'clock the next morning, being in the latitude of 62° 10′ South, longitude 172° Weſt, we ſaw the firſt ice iſland, 11° ½ farther South than the firſt ice we ſaw the preceding year after leaving the Cape of Good Hope. At the time we ſaw this ice we alſo ſaw an Antarctic peterel, ſome grey albatroſſes, and our old companions pintadoes and blue peterels. The wind kept veering from S. W. by the N. W. to N. N. E., for the moſt part a freſh gale, attended with a thick haze and ſnow; on which account we ſteered to the S. E. and E., keeping the wind always on the beam, that it might be in our power to return back nearly on the ſame track, ſhould our courſe have been interrupted by any danger whatever. For ſome days we had a great ſea from the N. W. and S. W., ſo that it is not probable there can be any land near, between theſe two points.

Tueſday 14. We fell in with ſeveral large iſlands on the 14th, and, about noon, with a quantity of looſe ice, through which we ſailed. Latitude 64° 55′ South, longitude 163° 20′ Weſt. Grey albatroſſes, blue peterels, pintadoes, and fulmers, were ſeen.

As

As we advanced to the S. E. by E. with a freſh gale at Weſt, we found the number of ice iſlands increaſe faſt upon us. Between noon and eight in the evening, we ſaw but two; but before four o'clock in the morning of the 15th, we had paſſed ſeventeen, beſides a quantity of looſe ice which we ran through. At ſix o'clock, we were obliged to haul to the N. E. in order to clear an immenſe field which lay to the South and S. E. The ice, in moſt part of it, lay cloſe packed together; in other places, there appeared partitions in the field, and a clear ſea beyond it. However, I did not think it ſafe to venture through, as the wind would not permit us to return the ſame way that we muſt go in. Beſides, as it blew ſtrong, and the weather, at times, was exceedingly foggy, it was the more neceſſary for us to get clear of this looſe ice, which is rather more dangerous than the great iſlands. It was not ſuch ice as is uſually found in bays, or rivers, and near ſhore; but ſuch as breaks off from the iſlands, and may not improperly be called parings of the large pieces, or the rubbiſh or fragments which fall off when the great iſlands break looſe from the place where they are formed.

1773. December. Wedneſ. 15.

We had not ſtood long to the N. E. before we found ourſelves embayed by the ice, and were obliged to tack and ſtretch to the S. W. having the field, or looſe ice, to the South, and many huge iſlands to the North. After ſtanding two hours on this tack, the wind very luckily veering to the weſtward, we tacked, ſtretched to the North, and ſoon got clear of all the looſe ice; but not before we had received ſeveral hard knocks from the larger pieces, which, with all our care, we could not avoid. After clearing one danger we ſtill had another to encounter; the weather remained foggy, and many large iſlands lay in our way; ſo that

1773. December. Wedneſ. 15. that we had to luff for one, and bear up for another. One we were very near falling aboard of; and if it had happened, this circumſtance would never have been related. Theſe difficulties, together with the improbability of finding land farther South, and the impoſſibility of exploring it, on account of the ice, if we ſhould find any, determined me to get more to the North. At the time we laſt tacked, we were in the longitude of 159° 20′ Weſt, and in the latitude of 66° 0′ S. Several penguins were ſeen on ſome of the ice iſlands, and a few antarctic peterels on the wing.

We continued to ſtand to the North, with a freſh gale at Weſt, attended with thick ſnow ſhowers, till eight o'clock in the evening, when the wind abated, the ſky began to clear Thurſday 16. up, and at ſix o'clock in the morning of the 16th it fell calm. Four hours after, it was ſucceeded by a breeze at N. E. with which we ſtretched to the S. E., having thick hazy weather, with ſnow ſhowers, and all our rigging coated with ice. In the evening we attempted to take ſome up out of the ſea, but were obliged to deſiſt; the ſea running too high, and the pieces being ſo large, that it was dangerous for the boat to come near them.

Friday 17. The next morning, being the 17th, we ſucceeded better; for, falling in with a quantity of looſe ice, we hoiſted out two boats; and, by noon, got on board as much as we could manage. We then made ſail for the Eaſt, with a gentle breeze northerly, attended with ſnow and ſleet, which froze to the rigging as it fell. At this time we were in the latitude of 64° 41′ South, longitude 155° 44′ Weſt. The ice we took up proved to be none of the beſt, being chiefly compoſed of frozen ſnow; on which account it was porous, and had imbibed a good deal of ſalt water: but this drained off,

fter lying a while on deck, and the water then yielded was freſh. We continued to ſtretch to the Eaſt, with a piercing cold northerly wind, attended with a thick fog, ſnow, and ſleet, that decorated all our rigging with icicles. We were hourly meeting with ſome of the large ice iſlands, which, in theſe high latitudes, render navigation ſo very dangerous: at ſeven in the evening, falling in with a cluſter of them, we narrowly eſcaped running aboard of one, and, with difficulty, wore clear of the others. We ſtood back to the Weſt till ten o'clock; at which time the fog cleared away, and we reſumed our courſe to the Eaſt. At noon, the next day, we were in the latitude of 64° 49′ S., longitude 149° 19′ Weſt. Some time after, our longitude, by obſerved diſtance of the ſun and moon, was 149° 19′ Weſt; by Mr. Kendal's watch 148° 36′; and, by my reckoning, 148° 43′, latitude 64° 48′ South.

1773. December. Friday 17. Saturday 18.

The clear weather, and the wind, veering to N. W., tempted me to ſteer South; which courſe we continued till ſeven in the morning of the 20th, when the wind changing to N. E. and the ſky becoming clouded, we hauled up S. E. In the afternoon the wind increaſed to a ſtrong gale, attended with a thick fog, ſnow, ſleet, and rain, which conſtitutes the very worſt of weather. Our rigging, at this time, was ſo loaded with ice that we had enough to do, to get our top-ſails down, to double the reef. At ſeven o'clock in the evening, in the longitude of 147° 46′, we came, the ſecond time, within the antarctic or polar circle, continuing our courſe to the S. E. till ſix o'clock the next morning. At that time, being in the latitude of 67° 5′, South, all at once we got in among a cluſter of very large ice iſlands, and a vaſt quantity of looſe pieces; and, as the fog was exceedingly thick, it

Monday 20. Tueſday 21.

was

1773. December. Tueſday 21. was with the utmoſt difficulty we wore clear of them. This done, we ſtood to the N. W. till noon, when, the fog being ſomewhat diſſipated, we reſumed our courſe again to the S. E. The ice iſlands we met with in the morning were very high and rugged, forming at their tops many peaks; whereas the moſt of thoſe we had ſeen before, were flat at top, and not ſo high; though many of them were between two and three hundred feet in height, and between two and three miles in circuit, with perpendicular cliffs or ſides, aſtoniſhing to behold. Moſt of our winged companions had now left us; the grey albatroſſes only remained; and, inſtead of the other birds, we were viſited by a few antarctic peterels.

Wedneſ. 22. The 22d we ſteered E. S. E. with a freſh gale at North, blowing in ſqualls, one of which took hold of the mizzen top-ſail, tore it all to rags, and rendered it, for ever after, uſeleſs. At ſix o'clock in the morning, the wind veering toward the Weſt, our courſe was Eaſt northerly. At this time we were in the latitude of 67° 31′, the higheſt we had yet been in, longitude 142° 54′ Weſt.

Thurſday 23. We continued our courſe to the E. by N. till noon the 23d, when being in the latitude of 67° 12′, longitude 138° 0′, we ſteered S. E.; having then twenty-three ice iſlands in ſight, from off the deck, and twice that number, from the maſt-head; and yet we could not ſee above two or three miles round us. At four o'clock in the afternoon, in the latitude of 67° 20′, longitude 137° 12′, we fell in with ſuch a quantity of field, or looſe ice, as covered the ſea in the whole extent from South to Eaſt, and was ſo thick and cloſe as wholly to obſtruct our paſſage. At this time, the wind being pretty moderate, and the ſea ſmooth, we brought to,

at

at the outer edge of the ice, hoiſted out two boats and ſent them to take ſome up. In the mean time, we laid hold of ſeveral large pieces along-ſide, and got them on board with our tackle. The taking up ice proved ſuch cold work, that it was eight o'clock by the time the boats had made two trips; when we hoiſted them in, and made ſail to the Weſt, under double-reefed top-ſails and courſes, with a ſtrong gale at North, attended with ſnow and ſleet, which froze to the rigging as it fell, making the ropes like wires, and the ſails like boards or plates of metal. The ſhivers alſo were frozen ſo faſt in the blocks, that it required our utmoſt efforts to get a top-ſail down and up; the cold ſo intenſe as hardly to be endured; the whole ſea, in a manner, covered with ice; a hard gale, and a thick fog.

1773. December. Thurſday 23.

Under all theſe unfavourable circumſtances, it was natural for me to think of returning more to the North; ſeeing no probability of finding any land here, nor a poſſibility of getting farther South. And to have proceeded to the Eaſt in this latitude, muſt have been wrong, not only on account of the ice, but becauſe we muſt have left a vaſt ſpace of ſea to the North unexplored; a ſpace of 24° of latitude; in which a large tract of land might have lain. Whether ſuch a ſuppoſition was well-grounded, could only be determined by viſiting thoſe parts.

While we were taking up ice, we got two of the antarctic peterels ſo often mentioned, by which our conjectures were confirmed of their being of the peterel tribe. They are about the ſize of a large pigeon; the feathers of the head, back, and part of the upper ſide of the wings, are of a light brown; the belly, and under ſide of the wings, white; the tail feathers are alſo white, but tipped with brown: at the

1773. December. Thurſday 23. ſame time, we got another new peterel, ſmaller than the former, and all of a dark grey plumage. We remarked that theſe birds were fuller of feathers than any we had hitherto ſeen; ſuch care has nature taken to cloath them ſuitably to the climate in which they live. At the ſame time we ſaw a few chocolate-coloured albatroſſes; theſe, as well as the peterels above-mentioned, we no where ſaw but among the ice; hence one may, with reaſon, conjecture that there is land to the South. If not, I muſt aſk where theſe birds breed? A queſtion which perhaps will never be determined; for hitherto we have found theſe lands, if any, quite inacceſſible. Beſides theſe birds, we ſaw a very large ſeal, which kept playing about us ſome time. One of our people who had been at Greenland, called it a ſea-horſe; but every one elſe who ſaw it, took it for what I have ſaid. Since our firſt falling in with the ice, the mercury in the thermometer had been from 33 to 31 at noon-day.

Friday 24. On the 24th, the wind abated, veering to the N. W., and the ſky cleared up, in the latitude of 67° 0′, longitude 138° 15′. As we advanced to the N. E. with a gentle gale at N. W., the ice iſlands increaſed ſo faſt upon us, that this day, at noon, we could ſee near 100 round us, beſides an immenſe number of ſmall pieces. Perceiving that it was likely to be calm, I got the ſhip into as clear a birth as I could; where ſhe drifted along with the ice, and by taking the advantage of every light air of wind, was kept from falling aboard any
Saturday 25. of theſe floating iſles. Here it was we ſpent Chriſtmas day, much in the ſame manner as we did the preceding one. We were fortunate in having continual day-light, and clear weather; for had it been as foggy as on ſome of the preceding days, nothing leſs than a miracle could have ſaved us from being daſhed to pieces.

1773. December. Sunday 26.

In the morning of the 26th, the whole ſea was in a manner covered with ice, 200 large iſlands, and upwards, being ſeen within the compaſs of four or five miles, which was the limits of our horizon; beſides ſmaller pieces innumerable. Our latitude at noon was 66° 15′; longitude 134° 22′. By obſervation we found that the ſhip had drifted, or gone about 20 miles to the N. E. or E. N. E.; whereas, by the ice iſlands, it appeared that ſhe had gone little or nothing; from which we concluded that the ice drifted nearly in the ſame direction, and at the ſame rate. At four o'clock a breeze ſprung up at W. S. W., and enabled us to ſteer North, the moſt probable courſe to extricate ourſelves from theſe dangers.

Monday 27.

We continued our courſe to the North with a gentle breeze at Weſt, attended with clear weather, till four o'clock the next morning, when meeting with a quantity of looſe ice, we brought to, and took on board as much as filled all our empty caſks, and for ſeveral days preſent expence. This done, we made ſail, and ſteered N. W. with a gentle breeze at N. E. clear froſty weather. Our latitude at this time was 65° 53′ S., longitude 133° 42′ Weſt; iſlands of ice not half ſo numerous as before.

Tueſday 28.

At four in the morning of the 28th, the wind having veered more to the Eaſt and S. E., increaſed to a freſh gale, and was attended with ſnow ſhowers. Our courſe was North till noon the next day. Being then in the latitude of 62° 24′, longitude 134° 37′, we ſteered N. W. by N. Some hours after, the ſky cleared up, and the wind abating, veered more to the South.

Wedneſ. 29.

Thurſday 30.

On the 30th, had little wind Weſterly; dark gloomy weather, with ſnow and ſleet at times; ſeveral whales ſeen play-

1773. December. ing about the ſhip, but very few birds; iſlands of ice in plenty, and a ſwell from W. N. W.

Friday 31. On the 31ſt, little wind from the weſtward; fair and clear weather, which afforded an opportunity to air the ſpare ſails, and to clean and ſmoke the ſhip between decks. At noon our latitude was 59° 40′ S., longitude 135° 11′ Weſt. Our obſervation to-day gave us reaſon to conjecture that we had a Southerly current. Indeed, this was no more than what might reaſonably be ſuppoſed, to account for ſuch huge maſſes of ice being brought from the South. In the afternoon we had a few hours calm, ſucceeded by a breeze from the Eaſt, which enabled us to reſume our N. W. by N. courſe.

1774. January. Saturday 1. January 1ſt, the wind remained not long at Eaſt, but veered round by the South to Weſt; blew freſh; attended with ſnow ſhowers. In the evening, being in the latitude of 58° 39′ S., we paſſed two iſlands of ice; after which we ſaw no more till we ſtood again to the South.

Sunday 2. At five o'clock in the morning on the 2d, it fell calm: being at this time in the latitude of 58° 2′, longitude 137° 12′. The calm being ſucceeded by a breeze at Eaſt, we ſteered N. W. by W. My reaſon for ſteering this courſe was to explore part of the great ſpace of ſea between us and our track to the South.

Monday 3. On the 3d, at noon, being in latitude 56° 46′, longitude 139° 45′, the weather became fair, and the wind veered to S. W. About this time we ſaw a few ſmall Divers (as we call them) of the peterel tribe, which we judged to be ſuch as are uſually ſeen near land, eſpecially in the bays, and on the

the coaſt of New Zealand. I cannot tell what to think of theſe birds. Had there been more of them, I ſhould have been ready enough to believe that we were, at this time, not very far from land; as I never ſaw one ſo far from known land before. Probably theſe few had been drawn thus far by ſome ſhoal of fiſh; for ſuch were certainly about us, by the vaſt number of blue peterels, albatroſſes, and ſuch other birds as are uſually ſeen in the great ocean; all or moſt of whom left us before night. Two or three pieces of ſea-weed were alſo ſeen; but theſe appeared old and decayed. 1774. January. Monday 3.

At eight o'clock in the evening, being in the latitude of 56° S., longitude 140° 31′ Weſt, the wind fixing in the Weſtern board, obliged us to ſteer North-Eaſterly, and laid me under the neceſſity of leaving unexplored a ſpace of the ſea to the Weſt, containing near 40° of longitude, and half that in latitude. Had the wind continued favourable, I intended to have run 15 or 20 degrees of longitude more to the Weſt in the latitude we were then in, and back again to the Eaſt in the latitude of 50°. This route would have ſo interſected the ſpace above mentioned, as hardly to have left room for the bare ſuppoſition of any land lying there. Indeed, as it was, we have little reaſon to believe that there is; but rather the contrary, from the great hollow ſwell we had had, for ſeveral days, from the W. and N. W. though the wind had blown from a contrary direction great part of the time; which is a great ſign we had not been covered by any land between theſe two points.

While we were in the high latitudes, many of our people were attacked with a ſlight fever, occaſioned by colds. It happily yielded to the ſimpleſt remedies; was generally removed

1774. January. moved in a few days; and, at this time, we had not above one or two on the ſick liſt.

Thurſday 6. We proceeded N. E. by N. till the 6th, at noon. Being then in the latitude 52° 0′ S., longitude 135° 32′ Weſt, and about 200 leagues from our track to Otaheite, in which ſpace it was not probable, all circumſtances conſidered, there is any extenſive land; and it being ſtill leſs probable any lay to the Weſt, from the great mountainous billows we had had, and ſtill continued to have, from that quarter, I, therefore, ſteered N. E., with a freſh gale at W. S. W.

Friday 7. At eight o'clock in the morning, on the 7th, being in the latitude of 50° 49′ South, we obſerved ſeveral diſtances of the ſun and moon, which gave the longitude as follows, viz.

By Mr. Wales,	133°	24′	Weſt.
Gilbert,	133	10	
Clerke,	133	0	
Smith,	133	37	25″
Myſelf,	133	37	
Mean,	133	21	43
By the Watch,	133	44	Weſt.
my reckoning,	133	39	
Variation of the compaſs,	6	2	Eaſt.
Thermometer,	50		

Saturday 8. The next morning we obſerved again; and the reſults were agreeable to the preceding obſervations, allowing for the ſhip's run. I muſt here take notice that our longitude can never be erroneous, while we have ſo good a guide as

Mr.

Mr. Kendal's watch. This day, at noon, we ſteered E. N. E. ½ E. being then in the latitude of 49° 7′ South, longitude 131° 2′ Weſt. 1774. January.

On the 9th, in the latitude of 48° 17′ S., longitude 127° 10′ Weſt, we ſteered Eaſt, with a fine freſh gale at Weſt, attended with clear, pleaſant weather, and a great ſwell from the ſame direction as the wind. Sunday 9.

In the morning of the 10th, having but little wind, we put a boat in the water, in which ſome of the officers went and ſhot ſeveral birds. Theſe afforded us a freſh meal: they were of the peterel tribe, and ſuch as are uſually ſeen at any diſtance from land. Indeed, neither birds, nor any other thing was to be ſeen, that could give us the leaſt hopes of finding any; and, therefore, at noon the next day, being then in the latitude of 47° 51′ S., longitude 122° 12′ Weſt, and a little more than 200 leagues from my track to Otaheite in 1769, I altered the courſe, and ſteered S. E. with a freſh gale at S. W. by W. In the evening, when our latitude was 48° 22′ S., longitude 121° 29′ Weſt, we found the variation to be 2° 34′ Eaſt; which is the leaſt variation we had found without the tropic. In the evening of the next day we found it to be 4° 30′ Eaſt; our latitude, at that time, was 50° 5′ S. longitude 119½° Weſt. Monday 10. Tueſday 11. Wedneſ. 12.

Our courſe was now more Southerly, till the evening of the 13th, when we were in the latitude of 53° 0′ South, longitude 118° 3′ Weſt. The wind being then at N. W. a ſtrong gale, with a thick fog and rain, which made it unſafe to ſteer large, I hauled up S. W., and continued this courſe till noon the next day, when our latitude was 56° 4′ S., longitude 122° 1′ Weſt. The wind having veered to the North, Thurſday 13. Friday 14.

and

1774. January. and the fog continuing, I hauled to the Eaſt, under cou... and cloſe-reefed topſails. But this ſail we could not carry long; for before eight o'clock in the evening, the wind increaſed to a perfect ſtorm, and obliged us to lye to, under the mizzen ſtayſail, till the morning of the 16th, when the wind having a good deal abated, and veered to Weſt, we ſet the courſes, reefed topſails, and ſtood to the South. Soon after, the weather cleared up; and, in the evening, we found the latitude to be 56° 48′ S., longitude 119° 8′ Weſt.

Sunday 16.

We continued to ſteer to the South, inclining to the Eaſt, till the 18th, when we ſtood to the S. W. with the wind at S. E., being at this time in the latitude of 61° 9′ South, longitude 116° 7′ Weſt. At ten o'clock in the evening, it fell calm, which continued till two the next morning, when a breeze ſprung up at North, which ſoon after increaſed to a freſh gale, and fixed at N. E. With this we ſteered South till noon on the 20th, when, being now in the latitude of 62° 34′ South, longitude 116° 24′ Weſt, we were again becalmed.

Tueſday 18.

Wedneſ. 19.

Thurſday 20.

In this ſituation we had two ice iſlands in ſight, one of which ſeemed to be as large as any we had ſeen. It could not be leſs than two hundred feet in height, and terminated in a peak not unlike the cupola of St. Paul's church. At this time we had a great weſterly ſwell, which made it improbable that any land ſhould lie between us and the meridian of $133\frac{1}{2}°$, which was our longitude, under the latitude we were now in, when we ſtood to the North. In all this route we had not ſeen the leaſt thing that could induce us to think we were ever in the neighbourhood of any land. We had, indeed, frequently ſeen pieces of ſea-weed; but this, I am well aſſured, is no ſign of the vicinity of land; for weed is ſeen in every part of the ocean. After a few hours calm,

we got a wind from S. E.; but it was very unſettled, and attended with thick ſnow ſhowers; at length it fixed at S. by E., and we ſtretched to the Eaſt. The wind blew freſh, was piercing cold, and attended with ſnow and ſleet. 1774. January.

On the 22d, being in the latitude of 62° 5′ South, longitude 112° 24′ Weſt, we ſaw an ice iſland, an antarctic peterel, ſeveral blue peterels, and ſome other known birds; but no one thing that gave us the leaſt hopes of finding land. Saturday 22.

On the 23d at noon, we were in the latitude of 62° 22′ S., longitude 110° 24′. In the afternoon, we paſſed an ice iſland. The wind, which blew freſh, continued to veer to the Weſt; and at eight o'clock the next morning, it was to the North of Weſt, when I ſteered S. by W. and S. S. W. At this time we were in the latitude of 63° 20′ South, longitude 108° 7′ Weſt, and had a great ſea from S. W. We continued this courſe till noon the next day the 25th, when we ſteered due South. Our latitude, at this time, was 65° 24′ South, longitude 109° 31′ Weſt; the wind was at North; the weather mild, and not unpleaſant; and not a bit of ice in view. This we thought a little extraordinary; as it was but a month before, and not quite two hundred leagues to the Eaſt, that we were in a manner blocked up with large iſlands of ice in this very latitude. Saw a ſingle pintadoe peterel, ſome blue peterels, and a few brown albatroſſes. In the evening, being under the ſame meridian, and in the latitude of 65° 44′ South, the variation was 19° 27′ Eaſt; but the next morning, in the latitude of 66° 20′ South, longitude the ſame as before, it was only 18° 20′ Eaſt: probably the mean between the two, is the neareſt the truth. At this time, we had nine ſmall iſlands in ſight; and ſoon after, we came, the third time, within the antarctic polar circle, in the longitude of 109° 31′ Weſt. Monday 24. Tueſday 25. Wedneſ. 26.

1774. January. Wedneſ. 26. About noon, ſeeing the appearance of land to the S. E., we immediately trimmed our ſails and ſtood towards it. Soon after it diſappeared, but we did not give it up till eight o'clock Thurſday 27. the next morning, when we were well aſſured that it was nothing but clouds, or a fog bank; and then we reſumed our courſe to the South, with a gentle breeze at N. E., attended with a thick fog, ſnow, and ſleet.

We now began to meet with ice iſlands more frequently than before; and, in the latitude of 69° 38′ South, longitude 108° 12′ Weſt, we fell in with a field of looſe ice. As we began to be in want of water, I hoiſted out two boats and took up as much as yielded about ten tons. This was cold work, but it was now familiar to us. As ſoon as we had done, we hoiſted in the boats, and afterwards made ſhort boards over that part of the ſea we had, in ſome meaſure, made ourſelves acquainted with. For we had now ſo thick a fog that we could not ſee two hundred yards round us; and as we knew not the extent of the looſe ice, I durſt not ſteer to the South till we had clear weather. Thus we ſpent the night, or rather that part of the twenty-four hours which anſwered to night; for we had no darkneſs but what was occaſioned by fogs.

Saturday 29. At four o'clock in the morning of the 29th, the fog began to clear away; and the day becoming clear and ſerene, we again ſteered to the South with a gentle gale at N. E. and N. N. E. The variation was found to be 22° 41′ E. This was in the latitude of 69° 45′ South, longitude 108° 5′ Weſt; and, in the afternoon, being in the ſame longitude, and in the latitude of 70° 23′ South, it was 24° 31′ Eaſt. Soon after, the ſky became clouded, and the air very cold. We continued our courſe to the South, and paſſed a piece of weed covered with barnacles,

barnacles, which a brown albatroſs was picking off. At ten o'clock, we paſſed a very large ice iſland; it was not leſs than three or four miles in circuit. Several more being ſeen ahead, and the weather becoming foggy, we hauled the wind to the Northward; but in leſs than two hours, the weather cleared up, and we again ſtood South. 1774. January. Saturday 29.

On the 30th, at four o'clock in the morning, we perceived the clouds, over the horizon to the South, to be of an unuſual ſnow-white brightneſs, which we knew denounced our approach to field-ice. Soon after, it was ſeen from the top-maſt head; and at eight o'clock, we were cloſe to its edge. It extended Eaſt and Weſt, far beyond the reach of our ſight. In the ſituation we were in, juſt the ſouthern half of our horizon was illuminated, by the rays of light reflected from the ice, to a conſiderable height. Ninety-ſeven ice hills were diſtinctly ſeen within the field, beſides thoſe on the outſide; many of them very large, and looking like a ridge of mountains, riſing one above another till they were loſt in the clouds. The outer, or northern edge of this immenſe field, was compoſed of looſe or broken ice cloſe packed together; ſo that it was not poſſible for any thing to enter it. This was about a mile broad; within which was ſolid ice in one continued compact body. It was rather low and flat (except the hills), but ſeemed to increaſe in height, as you traced it to the South; in which direction it extended beyond our ſight. Such mountains of ice as theſe, were, I believe, never ſeen in the Greenland Seas; at leaſt, not that I ever heard or read of; ſo that we cannot draw a compariſon between the ice here, and there. It muſt be allowed that theſe prodigious ice mountains muſt add ſuch additional weight to the ice fields which incloſe them, as cannot but Sunday 30.

1774. January. Sunday 30.

make a great difference between the navigating this icy ſea and that of Greenland.

I will not ſay it was impoſſible any where to get farther to the South; but the attempting it would have been a dangerous and raſh enterpriſe, and what, I believe, no man in my ſituation would have thought of. It was, indeed, *my* opinion, as well as the opinion of moſt on board, that this ice extended quite to the pole, or perhaps joined to ſome land, to which it had been fixed from the earlieſt time; and that it is here, that is to the South of this parallel, where all the ice we find ſcattered up and down to the North, is firſt formed, and afterwards broken off by gales of wind, or other cauſes, and brought to the North by the currents, which we always found to ſet in that direction in the high latitudes. As we drew near this ice ſome penguins were heard, but none ſeen; and but few other birds, or any other thing that could induce us to think any land was near. And yet I think there muſt be ſome to the South behind this ice; bnt if there is, it can afford no better retreat for birds, or any other animals, than the ice itſelf, with which it muſt be wholly covered. I, who had ambition not only to go farther than any one had been before, but as far as it was poſſible for man to go, was not ſorry at meeting with this interruption; as it, in ſome meaſure, relieved us; at leaſt, ſhortened the dangers and hardſhips inſeparable from the navigation of the ſouthern polar regions. Since therefore we could not proceed one inch farther to the South, no other reaſon need be aſſigned for my tacking, and ſtanding back to the North; being at this time in the latitude of 71° 10′ South, longitude 106° 54′ Weſt.

It

1774. January. Sunday 30. It was happy for us, that the weather was clear when we fell in with this ice, and that we diſcovered it ſo ſoon as we did; for we had no ſooner tacked than we were involved in a thick fog. The wind was at Eaſt, and blew a freſh breeze; ſo that we were able to return back over that ſpace we had already made ourſelves acquainted with. At noon, the mercury in the thermometer ſtood at 32½, and we found the air exceedingly cold. The thick fog continuing with ſhowers of ſnow, gave a coat of ice to our rigging of near an inch thick. In the afternoon of the next day the fog cleared Monday 31. away at intervals; but the weather was cloudy and gloomy, and the air exceſſively cold; however, the ſea within our horizon was clear of ice.

February. Tueſday 1. We continued to ſtand to the North with the wind eaſterly till the afternoon on the 1ſt of February, when falling in with ſome looſe ice which had broken from an iſland to windward, we hoiſted out two boats, and having taken ſome on board, reſumed our courſe to the North and N. E., with gentle breezes from the S. E., attended ſometimes with fair weather, and at other times with ſnow and ſleet. On the 4th Friday 4. we were in the latitude of 65° 42′ South, longitude 99° 44′. The next day the wind was very unſettled both in ſtrength and poſition, and attended with ſnow and ſleet. At length on the 6th, after a few hours calm, we got a breeze at South, Sunday 6. which ſoon after freſhened, fixed at W. S. W., and was attended with ſnow and ſleet.

I now came to a reſolution to proceed to the North, and to ſpend the enſuing winter within the Tropic, if I met with no employment before I came there. I was now well ſatisfied no continent was to be found in this ocean, but what muſt lie ſo far to the South as to be wholly inacceſſible on account of ice; and that, if one ſhould be found in the Southern Atlantic

Ocean,

1774. February. Sunday 6.

Ocean, it would be neceſſary to have the whole ſummer before us to explore it. On the other hand, upon a ſuppoſition that there is no land there, we undoubtedly might have reached the Cape of Good Hope by April, and ſo have put an end to the expedition, ſo far as it related to the finding a continent; which indeed was the firſt object of the voyage. But for me, at this time, to have quitted this Southern Pacific Ocean, with a good ſhip expreſsly ſent out on diſcoveries, a healthy crew, and not in want either of ſtores or of proviſions, would have been betraying not only a want of perſeverance, but of judgment, in ſuppoſing the South Pacific Ocean to have been ſo well explored, that nothing remained to be done in it. This, however, was not my opinion; for, although I had proved there was no continent but what muſt lie far to the South, there remained, nevertheleſs, room for very large iſlands in places wholly unexamined: and many of thoſe which were formerly diſcovered, are but imperfectly explored, and their ſituations as imperfectly known. I was beſides of opinion, that my remaining in this ſea ſome time longer, would be productive of improvements in navigation and geography, as well as other ſciences. I had ſeveral times communicated my thoughts on this ſubject to Captain Furneaux; but as it then wholly depended on what we might meet with to the South, I could not give it in orders, without running the riſque of drawing us from the main object.

Since now nothing had happened to prevent me from carrying theſe views into execution, my intention was firſt to go in ſearch of the land, ſaid to have been diſcovered by Juan Fernandez, above a century ago, in about the latitude of 38°; if I ſhould fail in finding

this land, then to go in ſearch of Eaſter Iſland or Davis's Land, whoſe ſituation was known with ſo little certainty, that the attempts lately made to find it had miſcarried. I next intended to get within the Tropic, and then proceed to the Weſt, touching at, and ſettling the ſituations of ſuch iſlands as we might meet with till we arrived at Otaheite, where it was neceſſary I ſhould ſtop to look for the Adventure. I had alſo thoughts of running as far Weſt as the Tierra Auſtral del Eſpiritu Santo, diſcovered by Quiros, and which M. de Bougainville calls the Great Cyclades. Quiros ſpeaks of this land as being large, or lying in the neighbourhood of large lands; and as this was a point which Bougainville had neither confirmed nor refuted, I thought it was worth clearing up. From this land my deſign was to ſteer to the South, and ſo back to the Eaſt between the latitudes of 50° and 60°; intending, if poſſible, to be the length of Cape Horn in November next, when we ſhould have the beſt part of the ſummer before us to explore the ſouthern part of the Atlantic Ocean. Great as this deſign appeared to be, I however thought it poſſible to be executed; and when I came to communicate it to the officers, I had the ſatisfaction to find, that they all heartily concurred in it. I ſhould not do theſe gentlemen juſtice, if I did not take ſome opportunity to declare, that they always ſhewed the utmoſt readineſs to carry into execution, in the moſt effectual manner, every meaſure I thought proper to take. Under ſuch circumſtances, it is hardly neceſſary to ſay, that the ſeamen were always obedient and alert; and, on this occaſion, they were ſo far from wiſhing the voyage at an end, that they rejoiced at the proſpect of its being prolonged another year, and of ſoon enjoying the benefits of a milder climate.

1774. February. Sunday 6.

I now

1774. February. Sunday 6. I now ſteered North inclining to the Eaſt, and in the evening we were overtaken by a furious ſtorm at W. S. W., attended with ſnow and ſleet. It came ſo ſuddenly upon us, that before we could take in our ſails, two old top-ſails, which we had bent to the yards, were blown to pieces, and the other ſails much damaged. The gale laſted, without the leaſt intermiſſion, till the next morning, when it began to abate; it, however, continued to blow very freſh till noon on the 12th, when it ended in a calm.

Monday 7.

Saturday 12.

At this time we were in the latitude of 50° 14′ South, longitude 95° 18′ Weſt. Some birds being about the ſhip, we took the advantage of the calm to put a boat in the water, and ſhot ſeveral birds, on which we feaſted the next day. One of theſe birds was of that ſort, which has been ſo often mentioned in this journal, under the name of Port Egmont hens. They are of the gull kind, about the ſize of a raven, with a dark brown plumage, except the under ſide of each wing; where there are ſome white feathers. The reſt of the birds were albatroſſes and ſheer-waters.

After a few hours calm, having got a breeze at N. W., we made a ſtretch to the S. W. for twenty-four hours; in which route we ſaw a piece of wood, a bunch of weed, and a diving peterel. The wind having veered more to the Weſt, made us tack and ſtretch to the North till noon on the 14th, at which time we were in the latitude of 49° 32′ South, longitude 95° 11′ Weſt. We had now calms and light breezes ſucceeding each other, till the next morning, when the wind freſhened at W. N. W. and was attended with a thick fog and drizzling rain the three following days, during which time we ſtretched to the North, inclining to the Eaſt, and croſſed my track to Otaheite in 1769. I did intend to have kept more

Monday 14.

Tueſday 15.

more to the Weſt, but the ſtrong winds from that direction put it out of my power. 1774. February.

On the eighteenth, the wind veered to S. W, and blew very freſh, but was attended with clear weather, which gave us an opportunity to aſcertain our longitude by ſeveral lunar obſervations made by Meſſrs. Wales, Clarke, Gilbert, and Smith. The mean reſult of all, was 94° 19′ 30″ Weſt; Mr. Kendal's watch, at the ſame time, gave 94° 46′ Weſt; our latitude was 43° 53′ South. The wind continued not long at S. W. before it veered back to Weſt and W. N. W. Friday 18.

As we advanced to the North, we felt a moſt ſenſible change in the weather. The 20th, at noon, we were in the latitude of 39° 58′ South, longitude 94° 37′ Weſt. The day was clear and pleaſant, and I may ſay, the only ſummer's day we had had, ſince we left New Zealand. The mercury in the thermometer roſe to 66. Sunday 20.

We ſtill continued to ſteer to the North, as the wind remained in the old quarter; and the next day, at noon, we were in the latitude 37° 54′ South; which was the ſame that Juan Fernandez's diſcovery is ſaid to lie in. We, however, had not the leaſt ſigns of any land lying in our neighbourhood. Monday 21.

The next day, at noon, we were in latitude 36° 10′ South, longitude 94° 56′ Weſt. Soon after, the wind veered to S. S. E., and enabled us to ſteer W. S. W., which I thought the moſt probable direction to find the land of which we were in ſearch; and yet I had no hopes of ſucceeding, as we had a large hollow ſwell from the ſame point. We, however, continued this courſe till the 25th, when, the wind having veered again round to the weſtward, I gave it up, and ſtood Tueſday 22. Friday 25.

1774. February Friday 25.

away to the North, in order to get into the latitude of Eaſter Iſland: our latitude, at this time, was 37° 52′, longitude 101° 10′ Weſt.

I was now well aſſured that the diſcovery of Juan Fernandez, if any ſuch was ever made, can be nothing but a ſmall iſland; there being hardly room for a large land, as will fully appear by the tracks of Captain Wallis, Bougainville, of the Endeavour, and this of the Reſolution. Whoever wants to ſee an account of the diſcovery in queſtion, will meet with it in Mr. Dalrymple's Collection of Voyages to the South Seas. This gentleman places it under the meridian of 90°, where I think it cannot be; for M. de Bougainville ſeems to have run down under that meridian; and we had now examined the latitude in which it is ſaid to lie, from the meridian of 94° to 101′. It is not probable it can lie to the Eaſt of 90°; becauſe if it did, it muſt have been ſeen, at one time or other, by ſhips bound from the northern to the ſouthern parts of America. Mr. Pengré, in a little treatiſe concerning the Tranſit of Venus publiſhed in 1768, gives ſome account of land having been diſcovered by the Spaniards in 1714, in the latitude of 38°, and 550 leagues from the coaſt of Chili, which is in the longitude of 110° or 111° Weſt, and within a degree or two of my track in the Endeavour; ſo that this can hardly be its ſituation. In ſhort, the only probable ſituation it can have, muſt be about the meridian of 106° or 108° Weſt; and then it can only be a ſmall iſle, as I have already obſerved.

I was now taken ill of the bilious colic, which was ſo violent as to confine me to my bed; ſo that the management of the ſhip was left to Mr. Cooper the firſt officer, who conducted her very much to my ſatisfaction. It was ſeveral days

days before the moſt dangerous ſymptoms of my diſorder were removed; during which time Mr. Patten the ſurgeon was to me, not only a ſkilful phyſician, but an affectionate nurſe; and I ſhould ill deſerve the care he beſtowed on me, if I did not make this public acknowledgment. When I began to recover, a favourite dog belonging to Mr. Forſter fell a ſacrifice to my tender ſtomach. We had no other freſh meat whatever on board; and I could eat of this fleſh, as well as broth made of it, when I could taſte nothing elſe. Thus I received nouriſhment and ſtrength, from food which would have made moſt people in Europe ſick: ſo true it is, that neceſſity is governed by no law. 1774. February. Friday 25.

On the 28th, in the latitude of 33° 7′ South, longitude 102° 33′ Weſt, we began to ſee flying-fiſh, egg-birds, and nodies, which are ſaid not to go above ſixty or eighty leagues from land; but of this we have no certainty. No one yet knows to what diſtance any of the oceanic birds go to ſea; for my own part, I do not believe there is one in the whole tribe that can be relied on, in pointing out the vicinity of land. Monday 28.

In the latitude of 30° 30′ South, longitude 101° 45′ Weſt, we began to ſee men of war birds. In the latitude of 29° 44′, longitude 100° 45′ Weſt, we had a calm for near two days together, during which time the heat was intolerable; but what ought to be remarked, was a very great ſwell from the S. W.

On the 6th of March the calm was ſucceeded by an eaſterly wind, with which we ſteered N. W. till noon the 8th, when, being in the latitude of 27° 4′ South, longitude 103° 58′ Weſt, we ſteered Weſt; meeting every day with March. Sunday 6. Tueſday 8.

1774. March. Tuesday 8. great numbers of birds, such as men of war, tropic, and egg-birds, nodies, sheer-waters, &c. and once we passed several pieces of sponge, and a small dried leaf not unlike a bay one. Soon after, we saw a sea snake, in every respect like those we had before seen at the Tropical Islands. We also saw plenty of fish, but were such bad fishers that we caught only four albacores, which were very acceptable, to me especially, who was just recovering from my late illness.

CHAP. VII.

Sequel of the Passage from New Zealand to Easter Island, and Transactions there, with an Account of an Expedition to discover the Inland Part of the Country, and a Description of some of the surprising gigantic Statues found in the Island.

Friday 11. AT eight o'clock in the morning on the 11th, land was seen, from the mast-head, bearing West; and at noon from the deck, extending from W. $\frac{3}{4}$ N. to W. by S., about twelve leagues distant. I made no doubt that this was Davis's Land, or Easter Island; as its appearance from this situation, corresponded very well with Wafer's account; and we expected to have seen the low sandy isle that Davis fell in with, which would have been a confirmation; but in this we were disappointed. At seven o'clock in the evening, the island bore from N. 62° West to North 87° West, about five leagues distant; in which situation we sounded without finding ground with a line of an hundred and forty fathoms. Here we spent the night, having alternately light airs and calms,

EASTER ISLAND.

Latitude 27° 05′ 30″, S°

Longitude 109° 46′ 20″, W.t of Greenwich.



Scale of one League

W.Whitchurch fculp.t 1776.

Published Feb.y 1.st 1777 by W.m Strahan, in New Street, Shoe Lane, & The Cattell in the Strand London.

N.o IX.

calms, till ten o'clock the next morning, when a breeze ſprung up at W. S. W. With this we ſtretched in for the land; and by the help of our glaſs, diſcovered people, and ſome of thoſe coloſſian ſtatues or idols mentioned by the authors of Roggewein's Voyage *. At four o'clock in the P. M. we were half a league S. S. E. and N. N. W. of the N. E. point of the iſland; and, on ſounding, found thirty-five fathoms, a dark ſandy bottom. I now tacked and endeavoured to get into what appeared to be a bay, on the Weſt ſide of the point or S. E. ſide of the iſland; but before this could be accompliſhed, night came upon us, and we ſtood on and off, under the land, till the next morning; having ſounding from ſeventy-five to an hundred and ten fathoms, the ſame bottom as before. 1774. March. Saturday 12.

On the 13th, about eight o'clock in the morning, the wind, which had been variable moſt part of the night, fixed at S. E., and blew in ſqualls, accompanied with rain; but it was not long before the weather became fair. As the wind now blew right on the S. E. ſhore, which does not afford that ſhelter I at firſt thought, I reſolved to look for anchorage on the Weſt and N. W. ſides of the iſland. With this view I bore up round the South point; off which lie two ſmall iſlots; the one, neareſt the point, high and peaked, and the other low and flattiſh. After getting round the point, and coming before a ſandy beach, we found ſoundings thirty and forty fathoms, ſandy ground, and about one mile from the ſhore. Here a canoe conducted by two men, came off to us. They brought with them a bunch of plantains, which they ſent into the ſhip by a rope, and then they returned aſhore. This gave us a good opinion of the iſlanders, and inſpired us with Sunday 13.

* See Dalrymple's Collection of Voyages, vol. ii.

1774. March. Sunday 13. hopes of getting ſome refreſhments, which we were in great want of.

I continued to range along the coaſt, till we opened the northern point of the iſle, without ſeeing a better anchoring-place than the one we had paſſed. We, therefore, tacked, and plied back to it; and, in the mean time, ſent away the maſter, in a boat to ſound the coaſt. He returned about five o'clock in the evening; and, ſoon after, we came to an anchor in thirty-ſix fathoms water, before the ſandy beach above mentioned. As the maſter drew near the ſhore with the boat, one of the natives ſwam off to her, and inſiſted on coming aboard the ſhip, where he remained two nights and a day. The firſt thing he did after coming aboard, was to meaſure the length of the ſhip, by fathoming her from the taffarel to the ſtem; and as he counted the fathoms, we obſerved that he called the numbers by the ſame names that they do at Otaheite; nevertheleſs his language was, in a manner, wholly unintelligible to all of us.

Monday 14. Having anchored too near the edge of the bank, a freſh breeze from the land, about three o'clock the next morning, drove us off it; on which the anchor was heaved up, and ſail made to regain the bank again. While the ſhip was plying in, I went aſhore, accompanied by ſome of the gentlemen, to ſee what the iſland was likely to afford us. We landed at the ſandy beach, where ſome hundreds of the natives were aſſembled, and who were ſo impatient to ſee us, that many of them ſwam off to meet the boats. Not one of them had ſo much as a ſtick or weapon of any ſort in their hands. After diſtributing a few trinkets amongſt them, we made ſigns for ſomething to eat; on which they brought down a few potatoes, plantains, and ſugar-canes,

and exchanged them for nails, looking-glaſſes, and pieces of cloth. 1774. March. Monday 14.

We preſently diſcovered that they were as expert thieves, and as tricking in their exchanges, as any people we had yet met with. It was with ſome difficulty we could keep the hats on our heads; but hardly poſſible to keep any thing in our pockets, not even what themſelves had ſold us; for they would watch every opportunity to ſnatch it from us, ſo that we ſometimes bought the ſame thing two or three times over, and after all did not get it.

Before I ſailed from England, I was informed that a Spaniſh ſhip had viſited this iſle in 1769. Some ſigns of it were ſeen among the people now about us; one man had a pretty good broad brimmed European hat on; another had a grego jacket; and another a red ſilk handkerchief. They alſo ſeemed to know the uſe of a muſquet, and to ſtand in much awe of it; but this they probably learnt from Roggewein, who, if we are to believe the authors of that voyage, left them ſufficient tokens.

Near the place where we landed, were ſome of thoſe ſtatues before mentioned, which I ſhall deſcribe in another place. The country appeared barren and without wood; there were, nevertheleſs, ſeveral plantations of potatoes, plantains, and ſugar-canes; we alſo ſaw ſome fowls, and found a well of brackiſh water. As theſe were articles we were in want of, and as the natives ſeemed not unwilling to part with them, I reſolved to ſtay a day or two. With this view, I repaired on board, and brought the ſhip to an anchor in thirty-two fathoms water; the bottom a fine dark ſand. Our ſtation was about a mile from the neareſt ſhore, the South point of a ſmall bay, in the bottom of which is the

ſandy

1774. March. Monday 14. ſandy beach before mentioned, being E. S. E., diſtant one mile and an half. The two rocky iſlots lying off the South point of the iſland, were juſt ſhut behind a point to the North of them; they bore South $\frac{3}{4}$ Weſt, four miles diſtant; and the other extreme of the iſland bore N. 25° E., diſtant about ſix miles. But the beſt mark for this anchoring-place is the beach; becauſe it is the only one on this ſide the iſland. In the afternoon, we got on board a few caſks of water, and opened a trade with the natives for ſuch things as they had to diſpoſe of. Some of the gentlemen alſo made an excurſion into the country to ſee what it produced; and returned again in the evening, with the loſs only of a hat, which one of the natives ſnatched off the head of one of the party.

Tueſday 15. Early next morning, I ſent Lieutenants Pickerſgill and Edgcumbe with a party of men, accompanied by ſeveral of the gentlemen, to examine the country. As I was not ſufficiently recovered from my late illneſs to make one of the party, I was obliged to content myſelf with remaining at the landing-place among the natives. We had, at one time, a pretty briſk trade with them for potatoes, which we obſerved they dug up out of an adjoining plantation; but this traffic, which was very advantageous to us, was ſoon put a ſtop to, by the owner (as we ſuppoſed) of the plantation coming down, and driving all the people out of it. By this we concluded, that he had been robbed of his property, and that they were not leſs ſcrupulous of ſtealing from one another, than from us, on whom they practiſed every little fraud they could think on, and generally with ſucceſs; for we no ſooner detected them in one, than they found out another. About ſeven o'clock in the evening, the party I had ſent into the country returned, after having been over the greateſt part of the iſland.

They

1774. March. Tuesday 15.

They left the beach about nine o'clock in the morning, and took a path which led acroſs to the S. E. ſide of the iſland, followed by a great crowd of the natives, who preſſed much upon them. But they had not proceeded far, before a middle-aged man, punctured from head to foot, and his face painted with a ſort of white pigment, appeared with a ſpear in his hand, and walked along ſide of them, making ſigns to his countrymen to keep at a diſtance, and not to moleſt our people. When he had pretty well effected this, he hoiſted a piece of white cloth on his ſpear, placed himſelf in the front, and led the way, with his enſign of peace, as they underſtood it to be. For the greateſt part of the diſtance acroſs, the ground had but a barren appearance, being a dry hard clay, and every where covered with ſtones; but notwithſtanding this, there were ſeveral large tracts planted with potatoes; and ſome plantain walks, but they ſaw no fruit on any of the trees. Towards the higheſt part of the South end of the iſland, the ſoil, which was a fine red earth, ſeemed much better; bore a longer graſs; and was not covered with ſtones as in the other parts; but here they ſaw neither houſe nor plantation.

On the Eaſt ſide, near the ſea, they met with three platforms of ſtone-work, or rather the ruins of them. On each had ſtood four of thoſe large ſtatues, but they were all fallen down from two of them, and alſo one from the third; all except one were broken by the fall, or in ſome meaſure defaced. Mr. Wales meaſured this one, and found it to be fifteen feet in length, and ſix feet broad over the ſhoulders. Each ſtatue had on its head a large cylindric ſtone of a red colour, wrought perfectly round. The one they meaſured, which was not by far the largeſt, was fifty-two inches high, and ſixty-ſix in diameter. In ſome the upper corner of the

1774. March. Tuesday 15. cylinder was taken off in a sort of concave quarter-round; but in others the cylinder was entire.

From this place they followed the direction of the coast to the N. E., the man with the flag still leading the way. For about three miles they found the country very barren, and in some places stript of the soil to the bare rock, which seemed to be a poor sort of iron ore. Beyond this, they came to the most fertile part of the island they saw, it being interspersed with plantations of potatoes, sugar-canes, and plantain trees, and these not so much encumbered with stones as those which they had seen before; but they could find no water except what the natives twice or thrice brought them, which, though brackish and stinking, was rendered acceptable, by the extremity of their thirst. They also passed some huts, the owners of which met them with roasted potatoes and sugar-canes, and placing themselves ahead of the foremost of the party (for they marched in a line in order to have the benefit of the path), gave one to each man as he passed by. They observed the same method in distributing the water which they brought; and were particularly careful that the foremost did not drink too much, least none should be left for the hindmost. But at the very time these were relieving the thirsty and hungry, there were not wanting others, who endeavoured to steal from them the very things which had been given them. At last, to prevent worse consequences, they were obliged to fire a load of small shot at one who was so audacious as to snatch from one of the men the bag which contained every thing they carried with them. The shot hit him on the back; on which he dropped the bag, ran a little way, and then fell; but he afterwards got up and walked, and what became of him they knew not, nor whether he was much wounded. As

this affair occaſioned ſome delay, and drew the natives together, they preſently ſaw the man who had hitherto led the way, and one or two more, coming running towards them; but inſtead of ſtopping when they came up, they continued to run round them, repeating, in a kind manner, a few words, until our people ſet forwards again. Then their old guide hoiſted his flag, leading the way as before, and none ever attempted to ſteal from them the whole day afterwards. 1774. March. Tueſday 15.

As they paſſed along, they obſerved on a hill a number of people collected together, ſome of whom had ſpears in their hands; but, on being called to by their countryman, they diſperſed; except a few, amongſt whom was one ſeemingly of ſome note. He was a ſtout well-made man, with a fine open countenance, his face was painted, his body punctured, and he wore a better *Ha hou*, or cloth, than the reſt. He ſaluted them as he came up, by ſtretching out his arms, with both hands clinched, lifting them over his head, opening them wide, and then letting them fall gradually down to his ſides. To this man, whom they underſtood to be the chief of the iſland, their other friend gave his white flag; and he gave it to another, who carried it before them the remainder of the day.

Towards the eaſtern end of the iſland, they met with a well whoſe water was perfectly freſh, being conſiderably above the level of the ſea; but it was dirty, owing to the filthineſs or cleanlineſs (call it which you will) of the natives, who never go to drink without waſhing themſelves all over as ſoon as they have done; and if ever ſo many of them are together, the firſt leaps right into the middle of the hole,

1774. March. Tueſday 9.

drinks, and waſhes himſelf without the leaſt ceremony; after which another takes his place and does the ſame.

They obſerved that this ſide of the iſland was full of thoſe gigantic ſtatues ſo often mentioned; ſome placed in groupes on platforms of maſonry; others ſingle, fixed only in the earth, and that not deep; and theſe latter are, in general, much larger than the others. Having meaſured one, which had fallen down, they found it very near twenty-ſeven feet long, and upwards of eight feet over the breaſt or ſhoulders; and yet this appeared conſiderably ſhort of the ſize of one they ſaw ſtanding: its ſhade, a little paſt two o'clock, being ſufficient to ſhelter all the party, conſiſting of near thirty perſons, from the rays of the ſun. Here they ſtopped to dine; after which they repaired to a hill, from whence they ſaw all the Eaſt and North ſhores of the iſle, on which they could not ſee either bay or creek fit even for a boat to land in; nor the leaſt ſigns of freſh water. What the natives brought them here was real ſalt water; but they obſerved that ſome of them drank pretty plentifully of it, ſo far will neceſſity and cuſtom get the better of nature! On this account they were obliged to return to the laſt-mentioned well; where, after having quenched their thirſt, they directed their route acroſs the iſland towards the ſhip, as it was now four o'clock.

In a ſmall hollow, on the higheſt part of the iſland, they met with ſeveral ſuch cylinders as are placed on the heads of the ſtatues. Some of theſe appeared larger than any they had ſeen before; but it was now too late to ſtop to meaſure any of them. Mr. Wales, from whom I had this information, is of opinion that there had been a quarry here, whence theſe

theſe ſtones had formerly been dug; and that it would have been no difficult matter to roll them down the hill after they were formed. I think this a very reaſonable conjecture; and have no doubt that it has been ſo. 1774. March. Tueſday 15.

On the declivity of the mountain towards the Weſt, they met with another well; but the water was a very ſtrong mineral, had a thick green ſcum on the top, and ſtunk intolerably. Neceſſity, however, obliged ſome to drink of it; but it ſoon made them ſo ſick, that they threw it up the ſame way it went down.

In all this excurſion, as well as the one made the preceding day, only two or three ſhrubs were ſeen. The leaf and ſeed of one (called by the natives *Torromedo)* were not much unlike thoſe of the common vetch; but the pod was more like that of a tamarind in its ſize and ſhape. The ſeeds have a diſagreeable bitter taſte; and the natives, when they ſaw our people chew them, made ſigns to ſpit them out; from whence it was concluded that they think them poiſonous. The wood is of a rediſh colour, and pretty hard and heavy; but very crooked, ſmall, and ſhort, not exceeding ſix or ſeven feet in height. At the S. W. corner of the iſland, they found another ſmall ſhrub, whoſe wood was white and brittle, and in ſome meaſure, as alſo its leaf, reſembling the aſh. They alſo ſaw in ſeveral places the Otaheitean cloth plant; but it was poor and weak, and not above two and a half feet high at moſt.

They ſaw not an animal of any ſort, and but very few birds; nor indeed any thing which can induce ſhips that are not in the utmoſt diſtreſs, to touch at this iſland.

This

1774. March. Tueſday 15. This account of the excurſion I had from Mr. Pickerſgill and Mr. Wales, men on whoſe veracity I could depend; and, therefore, I determined to leave the iſland the next morning, ſince nothing was to be obtained that could make it worth my while to ſtay longer; for the water which we had ſent on board, was not much better than if it had been taken up out of the ſea.

Wedneſ. 16. We had a calm till ten o'clock in the morning of the 16th, when a breeze ſprung up at Weſt, accompanied with heavy ſhowers of rain, which laſted about an hour. The weather then clearing up, we got under ſail, ſtood to ſea, and kept plying to and fro, while an officer was ſent on ſhore with two boats, to purchaſe ſuch refreſhments as the natives might have brought down; for I judged this would be the caſe, as they knew nothing of our ſailing. The event proved that I was not miſtaken; for the boats made two trips before night; when we hoiſted them in, and made ſail to the N. W., with a light breeze at N. N. E.

CHAP.

CHAP. VIII.

A Deſcription of the Iſland, its Produce, Situation, and Inhabitants; their Manners and Cuſtoms, Conjectures concerning their Government, Religion, and other Subjects; with a more particular Account of the gigantic Statues.

I SHALL now give ſome farther account of this iſland, which is undoubtedly the ſame that admiral Roggewein touched at in April 1722; although the deſcription given of it by the authors of that voyage does by no means agree with it now. It may alſo be the ſame that was ſeen by Captain Davis in 1686; for, when ſeen from the Eaſt, it anſwers very well to Wafer's deſcription, as I have before obſerved. In ſhort, if this is not the land, his diſcovery cannot lie far from the coaſt of America, as this latitude has been well explored from the meridian of 80° to 110°. Captain Carteret carried it much farther; but his track ſeems to have been a little too far South. Had I found freſh water, I intended ſpending ſome days in looking for the low ſandy iſle Davis fell in with, which would have determined the point. But as I did not find water, and had a long run to make before I was aſſured of getting any; and being in want of refreſhments, I declined the ſearch; as a ſmall delay might have been attended with bad conſequences to the crew, many of them beginning to be more or leſs affected with the ſcurvy. 1774. March.

No

1774. March.

No nation need contend for the honour of the diſcovery of this iſland; as there can be few places which afford leſs convenience for ſhipping than it does. Here is no ſafe anchorage; no wood for fuel; nor any freſh water worth taking on board. Nature has been exceedingly ſparing of her favours to this ſpot. As every thing muſt be raiſed by dint of labour, it cannot be ſuppoſed the inhabitants plant much more than is ſufficient for themſelves; and as they are but few in number, they cannot have much to ſpare to ſupply the wants of viſitant ſtrangers. The produce is ſweet potatoes, yams, tara or eddy root, plantains, and ſugar-canes, all pretty good, the potatoes eſpecially, which are the beſt of the kind I ever taſted. Gourds they have alſo; but ſo very few, that a cocoa-nut ſhell was the moſt valuable thing we could give them. They have a few tame fowls ſuch as cocks and hens, ſmall but well taſted. They have alſo rats, which, it ſeems, they eat; for I ſaw a man with ſome dead ones in his hand; and he ſeemed unwilling to part with them, giving me to underſtand they were for food. Land birds there were hardly any; and ſea birds but few; theſe were, men of war, tropic, and egg birds, nodies, tern, &c. The coaſt ſeemed not to abound with fiſh; at leaſt we could catch none with hook and line, and it was but very little we ſaw amongſt the natives.

Such is the produce of Eaſter Iſland, or Davis's Land, which is ſituated in the latitude of 27° 5′ 30″ S., longitude 109° 46′ 20″ Weſt. It is about ten or twelve leagues in circuit, hath a hilly and ſtony ſurface and an iron bound ſhore. The hills are of ſuch an height as to be ſeen fifteen or ſixteen leagues: off the South end, are two rocky iſlots, lying near the ſhore: the North and Eaſt points of the iſland

riſe

rife directly from the ſea to a conſiderable height; between them, on the S. E. ſide, the ſhore forms an open bay, in which I believe the Dutch anchored. We anchored, as hath been already mentioned, on the Weſt ſide of the iſland, three miles to the North of the South point, with the ſandy beach bearing E. S. E. This is a very good road with eaſterly winds, but a dangerous one with weſterly, as the other on the S. E. ſide muſt be with eaſterly winds. 1774. March.

For this, and other bad accommodations already mentioned, nothing but neceſſity will induce any one to touch at this iſle, unleſs it can be done without going much out of the way; in which caſe touching here may be advantageous, as the people willingly and readily part with ſuch refreſhments as they have, and at an eaſy rate. We certainly received great benefit from the little we got; but few ſhips can come here without being in want of water, and this want cannot be here ſupplied. The little we took on board, could not be made uſe of; it being only ſalt water which had filtrated through a ſtony beach, into a ſtone well. This the natives had made for the purpoſe, a little to the ſouthward of the ſandy beach ſo often mentioned; and the water ebbed and flowed into it with the tide.

The inhabitants of this iſland do not ſeem to exceed ſix or ſeven hundred ſouls, and above two-thirds of thoſe we ſaw were males. They either have but few females among them, or elſe many were reſtrained from making their appearance, during our ſtay; for though we ſaw nothing to induce us to believe the men were of a jealous diſpoſition, or the women afraid to appear in public, ſomething of this kind was probably the caſe.

1774. March.

In colour, features, and language, they bear ſuch affinity to the people of the more weſtern iſles, that no one will doubt that they have had the ſame origin. It is extraordinary that the ſame nation ſhould have ſpread themſelves over all the iſles in this vaſt ocean, from New Zealand to this iſland, which is almoſt one-fourth part of the circumference of the globe. Many of them have now no other knowledge of each other, than what is preſerved by antiquated tradition; and they have, by length of time, become, as it were, different nations, each having adopted ſome peculiar cuſtom, or habit, &c. Nevertheleſs, a careful obſerver will ſoon ſee the affinity each has to the other.

In general the people of this iſle are a ſlender race. I did not ſee a man that would meaſure ſix feet; ſo far are they from being giants, as one of the authors of Roggewein's voyage aſſerts. They are briſk and active, have good features, and not diſagreeable countenances, are friendly and hoſpitable to ſtrangers, but as much addicted to pilfering as any of their neighbours.

Tatowing, or puncturing the ſkin, is much uſed here. The men are marked from head to foot, with figures all nearly alike; only ſome give them one direction, and ſome another, as fancy leads. The women are but little punctured; red and white paint is an ornament with *them*, as alſo with the men; the former is made of tamarick, but what compoſes the latter, I know not.

Their cloathing is a piece or two of quilted cloth about ſix feet by four, or a mat. One piece wrapped round their loins, and another over their ſhoulders, make a complete dreſs. But the men, for the moſt part, are in a manner naked, wearing

wearing nothing but a ſlip of cloth betwixt their legs, each end of which is faſtened to a cord or belt they wear round the waiſt. Their cloth is made of the ſame materials as at Otaheite, viz. of the bark of the cloth-plant; but, as they have but little of it, our Otaheitean cloth, or indeed any ſort of it, came here to a good market. 1774. March.

Their hair, in general, is black; the women wear it long, and ſometimes tied up on the crown of the head; but the men wear it, and their beards, cropped ſhort. Their head-dreſs is a round fillet adorned with feathers, and a ſtraw bonnet ſomething like a Scotch one; the former, I believe, being chiefly worn by the men, and the latter by the women. Both men and women have very large holes, or rather ſlits, in their ears, extending to near three inches in length. They ſometimes turn this ſlit over the upper part, and then the ear looks as if the flap was cut off. The chief ear ornaments are the white down of feathers, and rings, which they wear in the inſide of the hole, made of ſome elaſtic ſubſtance, rolled up like a watch-ſpring. I judged this was to keep the hole at its utmoſt extenſion. I do not remember ſeeing them wear any other ornaments, excepting amulets made of bone or ſhells.

As harmleſs and friendly as theſe people ſeem to be, they are not without offenſive weapons, ſuch as ſhort wooden clubs, and ſpears; which latter are crooked ſticks about ſix feet long, armed at one end with pieces of flint. They have alſo a weapon, made of wood, like the *Patoo patoo* of New Zealand.

Their houſes are low miſerable huts, conſtructed by ſetting ſticks upright in the ground, at ſix or eight feet diſtance, then bending them towards each other, and tying them together,

1774. March.

gether at the top, forming thereby a kind of Gothic arch. The longeſt ſticks are placed in the middle, and ſhorter ones each way, and at leſs diſtance aſunder; by which means the building is higheſt and broadeſt in the middle, and lower and narrower towards each end. To theſe are tied others horizontally, and the whole is thatched over with leaves of ſugar-cane. The door-way is in the middle of one ſide, formed like a porch, and ſo low and narrow, as juſt to admit a man to enter upon all fours. The largeſt houſe I ſaw was about ſixty feet long, eight or nine feet high in the middle, and three or four at each end; its breadth at theſe parts, was nearly equal to its height. Some have a kind of vaulted houſes built with ſtone, and partly under ground; but I never was in one of theſe.

I ſaw no houſehold utenſils amongſt them except gourds, and of theſe but very few. They were extravagantly fond of cocoa-nut ſhells; more ſo than of any thing we could give them. They dreſs their victuals in the ſame manner as at Otaheite; that is, with hot ſtones, in an oven or hole in the ground. The ſtraw or tops of ſugar-cane, plantain heads, &c. ſerve them for fuel to heat the ſtones. Plantains, which require but little dreſſing, they roaſt under fires of ſtraw, dried graſs, &c.; and whole races of them are ripened or roaſted in this manner. We frequently ſaw ten, or a dozen, or more, ſuch fires in one place, and moſt commonly in the mornings and evenings.

Not more than three or four canoes were ſeen on the whole iſland; and theſe very mean, and built of many pieces ſewed together with ſmall line. They are about eighteen or twenty feet long, head and ſtern carved or raiſed a little, are very narrow, and fitted with out-riggers. They do

do not ſeem capable of carrying above four perſons, and are, by no means, fit for any diſtant navigation. As ſmall and as mean as theſe canoes were, it was a matter of wonder to us, where they got the wood to build them with. For in one of them was a board ſix or eight feet long, fourteen inches broad at one end, and eight at the other; whereas we did not ſee a ſtick on the iſland which would have made a board half this ſize; nor indeed was there another piece in the whole canoe half ſo big. 1774. March.

There are two ways by which it is poſſible they may have got this large wood: it might have been left here by the Spaniards; or it might have been driven on the ſhore of the iſland from ſome diſtant land. It is even poſſible that there may be ſome land in the neighbourhood, from whence they might have got it. We, however, ſaw no ſigns of any; nor could we get the leaſt information on this head from the natives, although we tried every method we could think of, to obtain it. We were almoſt as unfortunate in our inquiries for the proper or native name of the iſland. For, on comparing notes, I found we had got three different names for it, viz. Tamareki, Whyhu, and Teapÿ. Without pretending to ſay which, or whether any of them, is right, I ſhall only obſerve, that the laſt was obtained by Oedidee, who underſtood their language much better than any of us, though even he underſtood it but very imperfectly.

It appears by the account of Roggewein's voyage, that theſe people had no better veſſels than when he firſt viſited them. The want of materials, and not of genius, ſeems to be the reaſon why they have made no improvement in this art. Some pieces of carving were found amongſt them, both well deſigned and executed. Their plantations are pretily

1774. March. prettily laid out by line, but not incloſed by any fence; indeed, they have nothing for this purpoſe but ſtones.

I have no doubt that all theſe plantations are private property, and that there are here, as at Otaheite, chiefs (which they call *Areekes)* to whom theſe plantations belong. But of the power or authority of theſe chiefs, or of the government of theſe people, I confeſs myſelf quite ignorant.

Nor are we better acquainted with their religion. The gigantic ſtatues, ſo often mentioned, are not, in my opinion, looked upon as idols by the preſent inhabitants, whatever they might have been in the days of the Dutch; at leaſt, I ſaw nothing that could induce me to think ſo. On the contrary, I rather ſuppoſe that they are burying-places for certain tribes or families. I, as well as ſome others, ſaw a human ſkeleton lying in one of the platforms, juſt covered with ſtones. Some of theſe platforms of maſonry are thirty or forty feet long, twelve or ſixteen broad, and from three to twelve in height; which laſt in ſome meaſure depends on the nature of the ground. For they are generally at the brink of the bank facing the ſea, ſo that this face may be ten or twelve feet or more high, and the other may not be above three or four. They are built, or rather faced, with hewn ſtones of a very large ſize; and the workmanſhip is not inferior to the beſt plain piece of maſonry we have in England. They uſe no ſort of cement; yet the joints are exceedingly cloſe, and the ſtones morticed and tenanted one into another, in a very artful manner. The ſide-walls are not perpendicular, but inclining a little inwards, in the ſame manner that breaſt-works, &c. are built in Europe: yet had not all this care, pains, and ſagacity, been able to preſerve

theſe curious ſtructures from the ravages of all-devouring Time. 1774. March.

The ſtatues, or at leaſt many of them, are erected on theſe platforms, which ſerve as foundations. They are, as near as we could judge, about half length, ending in a ſort of ſtump at the bottom, on which they ſtand. The workmanſhip is rude, but not bad; nor are the features of the face ill formed, the noſe and chin in particular; but the ears are long beyond proportion; and, as to the bodies, there is hardly any thing like a human figure about them.

I had an opportunity of examining only two or three of theſe ſtatues, which are near the landing-place; and they were of a grey ſtone, ſeemingly of the ſame ſort as that with which the platforms were built. But ſome of the gentlemen, who travelled over the iſland, and examined many of them, were of opinion that the ſtone of which they were made, was different from any other they ſaw on the iſland, and had much the appearance of being factitious. We could hardly conceive how theſe iſlanders, wholly unacquainted with any mechanical power, could raiſe ſuch ſtupendous figures, and afterwards place the large cylindric ſtones, before mentioned, upon their heads. The only method I can conceive, is by raiſing the upper end by little and little, ſupporting it by ſtones as it is raiſed, and building about it till they got it erect; thus a ſort of mount or ſcaffolding would be made, upon which they might roll the cylinder, and place it upon the head of the ſtatue; and then the ſtones might be removed from about it. But if the ſtones are factitious, the ſtatues might have been put together on the place, in their preſent poſition, and the cylinder put on by building a mount round them as above mentioned. But,

let

1774. March.

let them have been made and ſet up, by this or any other method, they muſt have been a work of immenſe time, and ſufficiently ſhew the ingenuity and perſeverance of the iſlanders in the age in which they were built; for the preſent inhabitants have moſt certainly had no hand in them, as they do not even repair the foundations of thoſe which are going to decay. They give different names to them, ſuch as Gotomoara, Marapate, Kanaro, Goway-too-goo, Matta Matta, &c. &c.; to which they ſometimes prefix the word Moi, and ſometimes annex Areekee. The latter ſignifies Chief; and the former, Burying, or Sleeping-place, as well as we could underſtand.

Beſides the monuments of antiquity, which were pretty numerous, and no where but on or near the ſea-coaſt, there were many little heaps of ſtones, piled up in different places, along the coaſt. Two or three of the uppermoſt ſtones in each pile were generally white; perhaps always ſo, when the pile is complete. It will hardly be doubted that theſe piles of ſtone had a meaning. Probably they might mark the place where people had been buried, and ſerve inſtead of the large ſtatues.

The working-tools of theſe people are but very mean, and like thoſe of all the other iſlanders we have viſited in this ocean, made of ſtone, bone, ſhells, &c. They ſet but little value on iron or iron tools; which is the more extraordinary as they know their uſe; but the reaſon may be, their having but little occaſion for them.

CHAP.

CHAP. IX.

The Paſſage from Eaſter Iſland to the Marqueſas Iſlands. Tranſactions and Incidents which happened while the Ship lay in Madre de Dios, or Reſolution Bay, in the Iſland of St. Chriſtina.

AFTER leaving Eaſter Iſland, I ſteered N. W. by N. and N. N. W., with a fine eaſterly gale, intending to touch at the Marqueſas, if I met with nothing before I got there. We had not been long at ſea, before the bilious diſorder made another attack upon me, but not ſo violent as the former. I believe this ſecond viſit was owing to my expoſing and fatiguing myſelf too much at Eaſter Iſland. 1774. March. Wedneſ. 16.

On the 22d, being in the latitude of 19° 20′ South, longitude 114° 49′ Weſt, ſteered N. W. Since leaving Eaſter Iſland, the variation had not been more than 3° 4′, nor leſs than 2° 32′ Eaſt; but on the 26th, at 6 A. M., in latitude 15° 7′ South, longitude 119° 45′ Weſt, it was no more than 1° 1′ Eaſt; after which it began to increaſe. Tueſday 22. Saturday 26.

On the 29th, being in latitude 10° 20′, longitude 123° 58′ W., altered the courſe to W. N. W., and the next day to Weſt, being then in latitude 9° 24′, which I judged to be the parallel of Marqueſas; where, as I have before obſerved, I intended to touch, in order to ſettle their ſituation, which I find different in different charts. Having now a ſteady ſettled trade-wind, and pleaſant weather, I ordered the forge to be ſet up, to repair and make various neceſſary articles in the iron way; Tueſday 29.

1774. March. Tueſday 29. and the caulkers had already been ſome time at work caulking the decks, weather-works, &c.

April. Sunday 3. As we advanced to the Weſt, we found the variation to increaſe, but ſlowly; for, on the 3d of April, it was only 4° 40′ Eaſt, being then in the latitude 9° 32′, longitude 132° 45′, by obſervation made at the ſame time.

Wedneſ. 6. I continued to ſteer to the Weſt till the 6th, at four in the afternoon, at which time, being in the latitude of 9° 20′, longitude 138° 14′ Weſt, we diſcovered an iſland, bearing Weſt by South, diſtant about nine leagues. Two hours after we ſaw another, bearing S. W. by S., which appeared more extenſive than the former. I hauled up for this iſland, and ran under an eaſy ſail all night, having ſqually unſettled rainy weather, which is not very uncommon in this ſea, when near high land. Thurſday 7. At ſix o'clock the next morning, the firſt iſland bore N. W., the ſecond S. W. $\frac{1}{2}$ W., and a third W. I gave orders to ſteer for the ſeparation between the two laſt; and ſoon after, a fourth was ſeen, ſtill more to the Weſt. By this time, we were well aſſured that theſe were the Marqueſas, diſcovered by Mendana in 1595. The firſt iſle was a new diſcovery, which I named Hood's Iſland, after the young gentleman who firſt ſaw it; the ſecond was that of Saint Pedro, the third, La Dominica, and the fourth, St. Chriſtina. We ranged the S. E. coaſt of La Dominica, without ſeeing the leaſt ſigns of anchorage, till we came to the channel that divides it from St. Chriſtina, through which we paſſed, hauled over for the laſt-mentioned iſland, and ran along the coaſt to the S. W. in ſearch of Mendana's Port. We paſſed ſeveral coves in which there ſeemed to be anchorage; but a great ſurf broke on all the ſhores. Some canoes put off from theſe places, and followed us down the coaſt.

At length having come before the port we were in ſearch of, we attempted to turn into it, the wind being right out; but as it blew in violent ſqualls from this high land, one of theſe took us juſt after we had put in ſtays, payed the ſhip off again, and before ſhe wore round, ſhe was within a few yards of being driven againſt the rocks to leeward. This obliged us to ſtand out to ſea, and to make a ſtretch to windward; after which we ſtood in again, and without attempting to turn, anchored in the entrance of the bay in thirty-four fathoms water, a fine ſandy bottom. This was no ſooner done than about thirty or forty of the natives came off to us in ten or twelve canoes; but it required ſome addreſs to get them along-ſide. At laſt a hatchet, and ſome ſpike-nails, induced the people in one canoe to come under the quarter-gallery: after which all the others put along-ſide, and having exchanged ſome bread-fruit, and fiſh, for ſmall nails, &c. retired aſhore, the ſun being already ſet. We obſerved a heap of ſtones in the bow of each canoe, and every man to have a ſling tied round his hand. 1774. April. Thurſday 7.

Very early next morning, the natives viſited us again in much greater numbers than before; bringing with them bread-fruit, plantains, and one pig, all of which they exchanged for nails, &c. But, in this traffic, they would frequently keeep our goods and make no return; till at laſt I was obliged to fire a muſquet-ball over one man who had ſeveral times ſerved us in this manner; after which they dealt more fairly, and ſoon after ſeveral of them came on board. At this time we were preparing to warp farther into the bay, and I was going in a boat, to look for the moſt convenient place to moor the ſhip in. Obſerving too many of the natives on board, I ſaid to the officers, "You muſt look Friday 8.

1773. April. Friday 8.

" well after theſe people, or they will certainly carry off " ſomething or other." I had hardly got into the boat, before I was told they had ſtolen one of the iron ſtanchions from the oppoſite gang-way, and were making off with it. I ordered them to fire over the canoe till I could get round in the boat, but not to kill any one. But the natives made too much noiſe for me to be heard; and the unhappy thief was killed at the third ſhot. Two others in the ſame canoe leaped over-board; but got in again juſt as I came to them. The ſtanchion they had thrown over-board. One of them, a man grown, ſat bailing the blood and water out of the canoe, in a kind of hyſteric laugh. The other a youth about fourteen or fifteen years of age, looked on the deceaſed with a ſerious and dejected countenance: we had afterwards reaſon to believe he was his ſon.

At this unhappy accident, all the natives retired with precipitation. I followed them into the bay, and prevailed upon the people in one canoe to come along-ſide the boat, and receive ſome nails, and other things, which I gave them: This, in ſome meaſure, allayed their fears. Having taken a view of the bay, and found that freſh water, which we moſt wanted, was to be had, I returned on board, and carried out a kedge anchor with three hawſers upon an end, to warp the ſhip in by, and hove ſhort on the bower. One would have thought that the natives, by this time, would have been ſo ſenſible of the effect of our fire-arms, as not to have provoked us to fire upon them any more; but the event proved otherwiſe. For the boat had no ſooner left the kedge anchor, than two men in a canoe put off from the ſhore, took hold of the buoy-rope, and attempted to drag it aſhore, little conſidering what was faſt to it. Left, after diſ-

covering their miſtake, they ſhould take away the buoy, I ordered a muſquet to be fired at them. The ball fell ſhort, and they took not the leaſt notice of it; but a ſecond having paſſed over them, they let go the buoy, and made for the ſhore. This was the laſt ſhot we had occaſion to fire at any of them, while we lay at this place. It probably had more effect than killing the man, by ſhewing them that they were not ſafe at any diſtance; at leaſt we had reaſon to think ſo, for they afterwards ſtood in great dread of the muſquet. Nevertheleſs, they would very often be exerciſing their talent of thieving upon us, which I thought proper to put up with, as our ſtay was not likely to be long amongſt them. The trouble theſe people gave us retarded us ſo long, that, before we were ready to heave the anchor, the wind began to increaſe, and blew in ſqualls out of the bay; ſo that we were obliged to lie faſt. It was not long before the natives ventured off to us again. In the firſt canoe which came, was a man who ſeemed to be of ſome conſequence. He advanced ſlowly, with a pig on his ſhoulder, and ſpeaking ſomething which we did not underſtand. As ſoon as he got along-ſide, I made him a preſent of a hatchet, and ſeveral other articles. In return, he ſent in his pig; and was, at laſt, prevailed upon to come himſelf up into the gang-way, where he made but a ſhort ſtay, before he went away. The reception this man met with, induced the people in all the other canoes to put along-ſide; and exchanges were preſently re-eſtabliſhed.

1774. April. Friday 8.

Matters being thus ſettled on board, I went on ſhore with a party of men, to ſee what was to be done there. We were received by the natives with great courteſy; and, as if nothing had happened, trafficked with them for ſome fruit and a few ſmall pigs; and, after loading the launch with water,

returned

1773. April. Friday 8. returned aboard. After dinner I ſent the boats, under the protection of a guard, aſhore for water. On their landing, the natives all fled but one man, and he ſeemed much frightened; afterwards one or two more came down; and theſe were all that were ſeen this afternoon. We could not conceive the reaſon of this ſudden fright.

Saturday 9. Early in the morning of the 9th, the boats were ſent as uſual for water; and, juſt as they were coming off, but not before, ſome of the natives made their appearance. After breakfaſt I landed ſome little time before the guard, when the natives crowded round me in great numbers; but as ſoon as the guard landed, I had enough to do to keep them from running off; at length their fears vaniſhed, and a trade was opened for fruit and pigs. I believe the reaſon of the natives flying from our people the day before, was their not ſeeing me at the head of them; for they certainly would have done the ſame to-day had I not been preſent. About noon, a chief of ſome conſequence, attended by a great number of people, came down to the landing-place. I preſented him with ſuch articles as I had with me; and, in return, he gave me ſome of his ornaments. After theſe mutual exchanges a good underſtanding ſeemed to be eſtabliſhed between us; ſo that we got by exchanges as much fruit as loaded two boats, with which we returned on board to dinner; but could not prevail on the chief to accompany us.

In the afternoon the watering and trading parties were ſent on ſhore; tho' the latter got but little, as moſt of the natives had retired into the country. A party of us went to the other, or ſouthern, cove of the bay, where I procured five pigs, and came to the houſe, which, we were told, did belong

long to the man we had killed. He muſt have been a perſon of ſome note, as there were ſix pigs in and about his houſe, which we were told belonged to his ſon, who fled on our approach. I wanted much to have ſeen him, to make him a preſent, and, by other kind treatment, to convince him and the others, that it was not from any bad deſign againſt the nation, that we had killed his father. It would have been to little purpoſe, if I had left any thing in the houſe, as it certainly would have been taken by others; eſpecially as I could not ſufficiently explain to them my meaning. Strict honeſty was ſeldom obſerved when the property of our things came to be diſputed. I ſaw a ſtriking inſtance of this in the morning when I was going aſhore. A man in a canoe offered me a ſmall pig for a ſix inch ſpike, and another man being employed to convey it, I gave him the ſpike, which he kept for himſelf, and inſtead of it, gave to the man who owned the pig a ſixpenny nail. Words of courſe aroſe, and I waited to ſee how it would end; but as the man who had poſſeſſion of the ſpike ſeemed reſolved to keep it, I left them before it was decided. In the evening we returned on board with what refreſhments we had collected, and thought we had made a good day's work.

1774. April. Saturday 9.

On the 10th, early in the morning, ſome people from more diſtant parts came in canoes along-ſide, and ſold us ſome pigs; ſo that we had now ſufficient to give the crew a freſh meal. They were, in general, ſo ſmall that forty or fifty were hardly ſufficient for this purpoſe. The trade on ſhore for fruit was as briſk as ever. After dinner, I made a little expedition in my boat along the coaſt to the ſouthward, accompanied by ſome of the gentlemen: at the different places we touched at, we collected eighteen pigs; and, I believe,

Sunday 10,

1774. April. Sunday 10. I believe, might have gotten more. The people were exceedingly obliging wherever we landed, and readily brought down whatever we defired.

Monday 11. Next morning, I went down to the ſame place where we had been the preceding evening; but, inſtead of getting pigs, as I expected, found the ſcene quite changed. The nails, and other things, they were mad after but the evening before, they now deſpiſed; and inſtead of them wanted they did not know what; ſo that I was obliged to return with three or four little pigs, which coſt more than a dozen did the day before. When I got on board, I found the ſame change had happened there, as alſo at the trading-place on ſhore. The reaſon was, ſeveral of the young gentlemen having landed the preceding day, had given away in exchange various articles which the people had not ſeen before, and which took with them more than nails or more uſeful iron tools. But what ruined our market the moſt, was one of them giving for a pig a very large quantity of red feathers he had got at Amſterdam. None of us knew, at this time, that this article was in ſuch eſtimation here; and, if I had known it, I could not have ſupported the trade, in the manner it was begun, one day. Thus was our fine proſpect of getting a plentiful ſupply of refreſhments from theſe people fruſtrated; which will ever be the caſe ſo long as every one is allowed to make exchanges for what he pleaſes, and in what manner he pleaſes. When I found this iſland was not likely to ſupply us, on any conditions, with ſufficient refreſhments, ſuch as we might expect to find at the Society Iſles, nor very convenient for taking in wood and water, nor for giving the ſhip the neceſſary repairs ſhe wanted, I reſolved forthwith to leave it, and proceed to ſome other place

where

SKETCH

of the

MARQUESAS DE MENDOÇA.

HOODS ISLAND

Scale of Leagues.

1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 10

LA. DOMINICA

Ships Track, Apr.l 1774.

Resolution Bay

ST. CHRISTINIA

ST. PEDRO

RESOLUTION BAY OR PORT MADRE DE DIOS.

Watering Place

Lat. — 9° 55′ 30″ S

Longit. 139 08′ 40″ W.

12

9

13

20

26

27

32

38

Scale of one Mile.

LA. MAGDALENA

J. Russell fculpsit

Published Feb.y 1.st 1777 by W.m Strahan in New Street Sha.e Lane & Hes.a Cadell in the Strand London.

where our wants might be effectually relieved. For after having been nineteen weeks at ſea, and living all the time upon ſalt diet, we could not but want ſome refreſhments; although I muſt own, and that with pleaſure, that on our arrival here, it could hardly be ſaid we had one ſick man; and but a few who had the leaſt complaint. This was undoubtedly owing to the many antiſcorbutic articles we had on board, and to the great attention of the ſurgeon, who was remarkably careful to apply them in time. 1774. April. Monday 11.

CHAP. X.

Departure from the Marqueſas; a Deſcription of the Situation, Extent, Figure, and Appearance of the ſeveral Iſlands; with ſome Account of the Inhabitants, their Cuſtoms, Dreſs, Habitations, Food, Weapons, and Canoes.

AT three o'clock in the afternoon we weighed, and ſtood over from St. Chriſtina for La Dominica, in order to take view of the weſt ſide of that iſle; but, as it was dark before we reached it, the night was ſpent in plying between the two iſles. The next morning we had a full view of the S. W. point, from which the coaſt trended N. E.; ſo that it was not probable we ſhould find good anchorage on that ſide, as being expoſed to the eaſterly winds. We had now but little wind, and that very variable, with ſhowers of rain. At length we got a breeze at E. N. E. with which we ſteered to the South. At five o'clock in the P. M., Reſolution Bay Tueſday 12.

1774. April. Tueſday 12.

bore E. N. E. ½ E. diſtant five leagues, and the iſland Magdalena S. E., about nine leagues diſtant. This was the only ſight we had of this iſle. From hence I ſteered S. S. W. ½ W. for Otaheite, with a view of falling in with ſome of thoſe iſles diſcovered by former navigators, eſpecially thoſe diſcovered by the Dutch, whoſe ſituations are not well determined.

But it will be neceſſary to return to the Marqueſas; which were, as I have already obſerved, firſt diſcovered by Mendana a Spaniard, and from him obtained the general name they now bear, as well as thoſe of the different iſles. The nautical account of them, in Mr. Dalrymple's Collection of Voyages to the South Seas *, is deficient in nothing but ſituation. This was my chief reaſon for touching at them; the ſettling this point is the more uſeful, as it will, in a great meaſure, fix the ſituations of Mendana's other diſcoveries.

The Marqueſas are five in number, viz. La Magdalena, St. Pedro, La Dominica, Santa Chriſtina, and Hood's Iſland, which is the northernmoſt, ſituated in latitude 9° 26′ South, and N. 13° Weſt, five leagues and a half diſtant, from the Eaſt point of La Dominica, which is the largeſt of all the iſles, extending Eaſt and Weſt ſix leagues. It hath an unequal breadth, and is about fifteen or ſixteen leagues in circuit. It is full of rugged hills riſing in ridges directly from the ſea; theſe ridges are disjoined by deep vallies, which are clothed with wood, as are the ſides of ſome of the hills; the aſpect is, however, barren; but it is, nevertheleſs, inhabited. Latitude 9° 44′ 30″ South. St. Pedro, which is about three leagues in circuit, and of a good height, lies South, four

* Vol. I. p. 61. to 73.

leagues

leagues and an half from the Eaſt end of La Dominica: we know not if it be inhabited. Nature has not been very bountiful to it. St. Chriſtina lies under the ſame parallel, three or four leagues more to the Weſt. This iſland ſtretches North and South, is nine miles long in that direction, and about ſeven leagues in circuit. A narrow ridge of hills of conſiderable height extends the whole length of the iſland. There are other ridges, which, riſing from the ſea, and with an equal aſcent, join the main ridge. Theſe are disjoined by deep narrow vallies, which are fertile, adorned with fruit and other trees, and watered by fine ſtreams of excellent water. La Magdalena we only ſaw at a diſtance. Its ſituation muſt be nearly in the latitude of 10° 25′, longitude 138° 50′. So that theſe iſles occupy one degree in latitude, and near half a degree in longitude, viz. from 138° 47′ to 139° 13′ Weſt, which is the longitude of the Weſt end of La Dominica. 1774. April.

The port of Madre de Dios, which I named Reſolution Bay, is ſituated near the middle of the Weſt ſide of St. Chriſtina, and under the higheſt land in the iſland, in latitude 9° 55′ 30″, longitude 139° 8′ 40″ Weſt; and N. 15′ W. from the Weſt end of La Dominica. The South point of the bay is a ſteep rock of conſiderable height, terminating at the top in a peaked hill, above which you will ſee a path-way leading up a narrow ridge to the ſummits of the hills. The North point is not ſo high, and riſes with a more gentle ſlope. They are a mile from each other, in the direction of N. by E. and S. by W. In the bay, which is near three quarters of a mile deep, and has from thirty-four to twelve fathoms water, with a clean ſandy bottom, are two ſandy coves, divided from each other by a rocky point. In each is a rivulet of

1774. April. excellent water. The northern cove is the moſt commodious for wooding and watering. Here is the little waterfall mentioned by Quiros, Mendana's pilot; but the town, or village, is in the other cove. There are ſeveral other coves, or bays, on this ſide of the iſland; and ſome of them, eſpecially to the northward, may be miſtaken for this; therefore, the beſt direction is the bearing of the Weſt end of La Dominica.

The trees, plants, and other productions of theſe iſles, ſo far as we know, are nearly the ſame as at Otaheite and the Society Iſles. The refreſhments to be got are hogs, fowls, plantains, yams, and ſome other roots; likewiſe bread-fruit and cocoa-nuts, but of theſe not many. At firſt theſe articles were purchaſed with nails. Beads, looking-glaſſes, and ſuch trifles, which are ſo highly valued at the Society Iſles, are in no eſteem here; and even nails, at laſt, loſt their value for other articles far leſs uſeful.

The inhabitants of theſe iſlands, collectively, are without exception the fineſt race of people in this ſea. For fine ſhape and regular features, they perhaps ſurpaſs all other nations. Nevertheleſs, the affinity of their language to that ſpoken in Otaheite and the Society Iſles, ſhews that they are of the ſame nation. Oedidee could converſe with them tolerably well, though *we* could not; but it was eaſy to ſee that their language was nearly the ſame.

The men are punctured, or curiouſly *tattowed*, from head to foot. The figures are various, and ſeem to be directed more by fancy than cuſtom. Theſe punctuations make them look dark; but the women, who are but little punctured, youths, and young children who are not at all, are as fair

fair as ſome Europeans. The men are, in general, tall; that is, about five feet ten inches or ſix feet; but I ſaw none that were fat and luſty like the *Earees* of Otaheite; nor did I ſee any that could be called meagre. Their teeth are not ſo good, nor are their eyes ſo full and lively as thoſe of many other nations. Their hair, like ours, is of many colours, except red, of which I ſaw none. Some have it long; but the moſt general cuſtom is to wear it ſhort, except a bunch on each ſide of the crown, which they tie in a knot. They obſerve different modes in trimming the beard, which is, in general, long. Some part it, and tie it in two bunches under the chin; others plait it; ſome wear it looſe; and others quite ſhort. 1774. April.

Their cloathing is the ſame as at Otaheite, and made of the ſame materials; but they have it not in ſuch plenty, nor is it ſo good. The men, for the moſt part, have nothing to cover their nakedneſs, except the *Marra*, as it is called at Otaheite; which is a ſlip of cloth paſſed round the waiſt and betwixt the legs. This ſimple dreſs is quite ſufficient for the climate, and anſwers every purpoſe modeſty requires. The dreſs of the women is a piece of cloth, wrapped round the loins like a petticoat, which reaches down below the middle of the leg, and a looſe mantle over their ſhoulders. Their principal head-dreſs, and what appears to be their chief ornament, is a ſort of broad fillet, curiouſly made of the fibres of the huſk of cocoa-nuts. In the front is fixed a mother-of-pearl ſhell wrought round to the ſize of a tea ſaucer. Before that, another, ſmaller, of very fine tortoiſe-ſhell, perforated in curious figures. Alſo before, and in the center of that, is another round piece of mother-of-pearl, about the ſize of half a crown; and before this another piece of perforated tortoiſe-

ſhell

1774. April. ſhell the ſize of a ſhilling. Beſides this decoration in front, ſome have it alſo on each ſide, but in ſmaller pieces; and all have fixed to them the tail-feathers of cocks or tropic birds, which, when the fillet is tied on, ſtand upright; ſo that the whole together makes a very ſightly ornament. They wear round the neck a kind of ruff or necklace, call it which you pleaſe, made of light wood, the out and upper ſide covered with ſmall red peas, which are fixed on with gum. They alſo wear ſmall bunches of human hair, faſtened to a ſtring, and tied round the legs and arms. Sometimes inſtead of hair they make uſe of ſhort feathers; but all the above-mentioned ornaments are ſeldom ſeen on the ſame perſon.

I ſaw only the chief, who came to viſit us, completely dreſſed in this manner. Their ordinary ornaments are necklaces and amulets made of ſhells, &c. I did not ſee any with ear-rings; and yet all of them had their ears pierced.

Their dwellings are in the vallies, and on the ſides of the hills, near their plantations. They are built after the ſame manner as at Otaheite; but are much meaner, and only covered with the leaves of the bread tree. The moſt of them are built on a ſquare, or oblong, pavement of ſtone, raiſed ſome height above the level of the ground. They likewiſe have ſuch pavements near their houſes, on which they ſit to eat and amuſe themſelves.

In the article of eating, theſe people are, by no means, ſo cleanly as the Otaheiteans. They are likewiſe dirty in their cookery. Pork and fowls are dreſſed in an oven of hot ſtones as at Otaheite; but fruit and roots they roaſt on the fire, and after taking off the rind or ſkin, put them into a platter or trough with water, out of which I have ſeen both men and hogs eat at the ſame time. I once ſaw them make a batter

of

of fruit and roots diluted with water, in a veſſel that was loaded with dirt, and out of which the hogs had been but that moment eating, without giving it the leaſt waſhing, or even waſhing their hands, which were equally dirty; and, when I expreſſed a diſlike, was laughed at. I know not if all are ſo. The actions of a few individuals are not ſufficient to fix a cuſtom on a whole nation. Nor can I ſay, if it is the cuſtom for men and women to have ſeparate meſſes. I ſaw nothing to the contrary; indeed I ſaw but few women upon the whole. 1774. April.

They ſeemed to have dwellings, or ſtrong-holds, on the ſummits of the higheſt hills. Theſe we only ſaw by the help of our glaſſes; for I did not permit any of our people to go there, as we were not ſufficiently acquainted with the diſpoſition of the natives, which (I believe) is humane and pacific.

Their weapons are clubs and ſpears, reſembling thoſe of Otaheite, but ſomewhat neater. They have alſo ſlings, with which they throw ſtones with great velocity, and to a great diſtance, but not with a good aim.

Their canoes are made of wood, and pieces of the bark of a ſoft tree, which grows near the ſea in great plenty, and is very tough and proper for the purpoſe. They are from ſixteen to twenty feet long, and about fifteen inches broad: the head and ſtern are made of two ſolid pieces of wood; the ſtern riſes or curves a little, but in an irregular direction, and ends in a point; the head projects out horizontally, and is carved into ſome faint and very rude reſemblance of a human face. They are rowed by paddles, and ſome have a ſort of latteen ſail made of matting.

1774. April. Hogs were the only quadrupeds we ſaw; and cocks and hens the only tame fowls. However, the woods ſeemed to abound with ſmall birds of a very beautiful plumage, and fine notes; but the fear of alarming the natives, hindered us from ſhooting ſo many of them as might otherwiſe have been done.

CHAP. XI.

A Deſcription of ſeveral Iſlands diſcovered, or ſeen in the Paſſage from the Marqueſas to Otaheite; with an Account of a Naval Review.

Sunday 17. WITH a fine eaſterly wind I ſteered S. W.—S. W. by W. and W. by S. till the 17th, at ten o'clock in the morning, when land was ſeen bearing W. $\frac{1}{2}$ N., which, upon a nearer approach, we found to be a ſtring of low iſlots connected together by a reef of coral rocks. We ranged the N. W. coaſt, at the diſtance of one mile from ſhore, to three quarters of its length, which in the whole is near four leagues, when we came to a creek or inlet that ſeemed to open a communication into the lake in the middle of the iſle. As I wanted to obtain ſome knowledge of the produce of theſe half-drowned iſles, we brought to, hoiſted out a boat, and ſent the maſter in to ſound; there being no ſoundings without.

As we ran along the coaſt the natives appeared in ſeveral places armed with long ſpears and clubs; and ſome were got together on one ſide of the creek. When the maſter returned

turned he reported that there was no paſſage into the lake by the creek, which was fifty fathoms wide at the entrance, and thirty deep; farther in thirty wide, and twelve deep; that the bottom was every where rocky, and the ſides bounded by a wall of coral rocks. We were under no neceſſity to put the ſhip into ſuch a place as this; but as the natives had ſhewn ſome ſigns of a friendly diſpoſition, by coming peaceably to the boat, and taking ſuch things as were given them, I ſent two boats well armed aſhore, under the command of Lieutenant Cooper, with a view of having ſome intercourſe with them, and to give Mr. Forſter an opportunity of collecting ſomething in his way. We ſaw our people land without the leaſt oppoſition being made by a few natives who were on the ſhores. Some little time after, obſerving forty or fifty more, all armed, coming to join them, we ſtood cloſe in ſhore, in order to be ready to ſupport our people in caſe of an attack. But nothing of this kind happened; and ſoon after, our boats returned aboard, when Mr. Cooper informed me that, on his landing, only a few of the natives met him on the beach, but there were many in the ſkirts of the woods with ſpears in their hands. The preſents he made them were received with great coolneſs, which plainly ſhewed we were unwelcome viſiters. When their reinforcement arrived he thought proper to embark, as the day was already far ſpent, and I had given orders to avoid an attack by all poſſible means. When his men got into the boats, ſome were for puſhing them off, others for detaining them; but, at laſt, they ſuffered them to depart at their leiſure. They brought aboard five dogs, which ſeemed to be in plenty there. They ſaw no fruit but cocoa-nuts, of which they got, by exchanges, two dozen. One of our people got

1774. April. Sunday 17.

1774. April. Sunday 17. a dog for a ſingle plantain, which led us to conjecture they had none of this fruit.

This iſland, which is called by the inhabitants Tiookea, was diſcovered and viſited by Commodore Byron. It has ſomething of an oval ſhape, is about ten leagues in circuit, lying in the direction of E. S. E., and W. N. W., and ſituated in the latitude of 14° 27′ 30″ South, longitude 144° 56′ Weſt. The inhabitants of this iſland, and perhaps of all the low ones, are of a much darker colour than thoſe of the higher iſlands, and ſeem to be of a more ferine diſpoſition. This may be owing to their ſituation. Nature not having beſtowed her favours to theſe low iſlands with that profuſion ſhe has done to ſome of the others, the inhabitants are chiefly beholden to the ſea for their ſubſiſtence; conſequently are much expoſed to the ſun and weather; and, by that means, become more dark in colour, and more hardy and robuſt; for there is no doubt of their being of the ſame nation. Our people obſerved that they were ſtout, well made men, and had, marked on their bodies, the figure of a fiſh; a very good emblem of their profeſſion.

Monday 18. On the 18th at day-break, after having ſpent the night making ſhort boards, we wore down to another iſle we had in ſight to the weſtward, which we reached by eight o'clock, and ranged the S. E. ſide at one mile from ſhore. We found it to be juſt ſuch another as that we had left, extending N. E. and S. W. near four leagues, and from five to three miles broad. It lies S. W. by W., two leagues diſtant from the Weſt end of Tiookea; and the middle is ſituated in the latitude of 14° 37′ South, longitude 145° 10′ Weſt. Theſe muſt be the ſame iſlands to which Commodore Byron gave the name of George's Iſlands. Their ſituation in longitude, which

which was determined by lunar obſervations made near the ſhores, and ſtill farther correct by the difference of longitude carried on by the watch to Otaheite, is 3° 54′ more Eaſt than he ſays they lie. This correction, I apprehend, may be applied to all the iſlands he diſcovered. 1774. April. Monday 18.

After leaving theſe iſles we ſteered S. S. W. ½ W., and S. W. by S., with a fine eaſterly gale, having ſigns of the vicinity of land, particularly a ſmooth ſea; and on the 19th, at ſeven in the morning, land was ſeen to the weſtward, which we bore down to, and reached the S. E. end by nine o'clock. It proved to be another of theſe half-overflowed or drowned iſlands, which are ſo common to this part of the ocean; that is, a number of little iſles ranged in a circular form, connected together by a reef or wall of coral rock. The ſea is, in general, every where on their out-ſide, unfathomable; all their interior parts are covered with water, abounding, I have been told, with fiſh and turtle, on which the inhabitants ſubſiſt, and ſometimes exchange the latter with the high iſlanders for cloth, &c. Theſe inland ſeas would be excellent harbours, were they not ſhut up from the acceſs of ſhipping; which is the caſe with moſt of them, if we can believe the report of the inhabitants of the other iſles. Indeed few of them have been well ſearched by Europeans; the little proſpect of meeting with freſh water having generally diſcouraged every attempt of this kind. I, who have ſeen a great many, have not yet ſeen an inlet into one. Tueſday 19.

This iſland is ſituated in the latitude of 15° 26′, longitude 146° 20′. It is five leagues long in the direction of N. N. E. and S. S. W. and about three leagues broad. As we drew near the South end, we ſaw from the maſt-head, another of theſe low iſles bearing S. E., diſtant about four or five leagues,

1774. April. Tueſday 19. but being to windward we could not fetch it. Soon after a third appeared, bearing S. W. by S., for which we ſteered, and at two o'clock P. M., reached the Eaſt end, which is ſituated in latitude 15° 47′ South, longitude 146° 30′ Weſt. This iſland extends W. N. W. and E. S. E., and is ſeven leagues long in that direction; but its breadth is not above two. It is, in all reſpects, like the reſt; only here are fewer iſlots, and leſs firm land on the reef which incloſeth the lake. As we ranged the North coaſt, at the diſtance of half a mile, we ſaw people, huts, canoes, and places built, ſeemingly for drying of fiſh. They ſeemed to be the ſame ſort of people as on Ti-oo-kea, and were armed with long ſpikes like them. Drawing near the weſt end we diſcovered another or fourth iſland, bearing N. N. E. It ſeemed to be low like the others, and lies weſt from the firſt iſle, diſtant ſix leagues. Theſe four iſles I called Palliſer's Iſles, in honour of my worthy friend Sir Hugh Palliſer, at this time comptroller of the navy.

Wedneſ. 20. Not chuſing to run farther in the dark, we ſpent the night making ſhort boards under the top-ſail, and on the 20th at day-break, hauled round the Weſt end of the third iſle, which was no ſooner done than we found a great ſwell rolling in from the South; a ſure ſign that we were clear of theſe low iſlands; and as we ſaw no more land, I ſteered S. W. $\frac{1}{2}$ S. for Otaheite; having the advantage of a ſtout gale at Eaſt, attended with ſhowers of rain. It cannot be determined with any degree of certainty whether the group of iſles we had lately ſeen, be any of thoſe diſcovered by the Dutch navigators, or no; the ſituation of their diſcoveries not being handed down to us with ſufficient accuracy. It is however neceſſary to obſerve, that this part of the ocean, that

that is from the latitude of 20° down to 14° or 12°, and from the meridian of 138° to 148° or 150° Weſt, is ſo ſtrewed with theſe low iſles, that a navigator cannot proceed with too much caution. 1774. April. Wedneſ. 20.

We made the high land of Otaheite on the 21ſt, and at noon were about thirteen leagues Eaſt of Point Venus, for which we ſteered, and got pretty well in with it by ſun-ſet, when we ſhortened ſail; and having ſpent the night, which was ſqually with rain, ſtanding on and off, at eight o'clock the next morning anchored in Matavai Bay in ſeven fathoms water. This was no ſooner known to the natives than many of them made us a viſit, and expreſſed not a little joy at ſeeing us again. Thurſday 21. Friday 22.

As my chief reaſon for putting in at this place was to give Mr. Wales an opportunity to know the error of the watch by the known longitude, and to determine anew her rate of going, the firſt thing we did was to land his inſtruments, and to erect tents for the reception of a guard and ſuch other people as it was neceſſary to have on ſhore. Sick we had none; the refreſhments we got at the Marqueſas had removed every complaint of that kind.

On the 23d, ſhowery weather. Our very good friends the natives ſupplied us with fruit and fiſh ſufficient for the whole crew. Saturday 23.

On the 24th, Otoo the king, and ſeveral other chiefs, with a train of attendants, paid us a viſit, and brought as preſents ten or a dozen large hogs, beſides fruits, which made them exceedingly welcome. I was advertiſed of the king's coming, and looked upon it as a good omen. Knowing how much it was my intereſt to make this man my friend, Sunday 24.

I met

1774. April. Sunday 24. I met him at the tents, and conducted him and his friends on board, in my boat, where they ſtaid dinner; after which they were diſmiſſed with ſuitable preſents, and highly pleaſed with the reception they had met with.

Monday 25. Next day we had much thunder, lightning, and rain. This did not hinder the king from making me another viſit, and a preſent of a large quantity of refreſhments. It hath been already mentioned, that when we were at the iſland of Amſterdam we had collected, amongſt other curioſities, ſome red parrot feathers. When this was known here, all the principal people of both ſexes endeavoured to ingratiate themſelves into our favour by bringing us hogs, fruit, and every other thing the iſland afforded, in order to obtain theſe valuable jewels. Our having theſe feathers was a fortunate circumſtance; for as they were valuable to the natives, they became ſo to us; but more eſpecially as my ſtock of trade was, by this time, greatly exhauſted; ſo that, if it had not been for the feathers, I ſhould have found it difficult to have ſupplied the ſhip with the neceſſary refreſhments.

When I put in at this iſland I intended to ſtay no longer than till Mr. Wales had made the neceſſary obſervations for the purpoſes already mentioned; thinking we ſhould meet with no better ſucceſs than we did the laſt time we were here. But the reception we had already met with, and the few excurſions we had made, which did not exceed the plains of Matavai and Oparree, convinced us of our error. We found at theſe two places, built and building, a great number of large canoes, and houſes of every kind; people living in ſpacious habitations, who had not a place to ſhelter themſelves in eight months before; ſeveral large hogs about every houſe; and every other ſign of a riſing ſtate.

Judging

Judging from theſe favourable circumſtances that we ſhould not mend ourſelves by removing to another iſland, I reſolved to make a longer ſtay, and to begin with the repairs of the ſhip and ſtores, &c. Accordingly I ordered the empty caſks and ſails to be got aſhore to be repaired; the ſhip to be caulked; and the rigging to be overhauled; all of which the high ſouthern latitudes had made indiſpenſably neceſſary. 1774. April. Monday 25.

In the morning of the 26th, I went down to Oparree, accompanied by ſome of the officers and gentlemen, to pay Otoo a viſit by appointment. As we drew near, we obſerved a number of large canoes in motion; but were ſurprized, when we arrived, to ſee upwards of three hundred ranged in order, for ſome diſtance, along the ſhore, all completely equipped, and manned, beſides a vaſt number of armed men upon the ſhore. So unexpected an armament collected together in our neighbourhood, in the ſpace of one night, gave riſe to various conjectures. We landed, however, in the midſt of them, and were received by a vaſt multitude, many of them under arms, and many not. The cry of the latter was *Tiyo no Otoo*, and that of the former *Tiyo no Towha*. This chief, we afterwards learnt, was admiral or commander of the fleet and troops preſent. The moment we landed I was met by a chief whoſe name was Tee, uncle to the king, and one of his prime miniſters, of whom I inquired for Otoo. Preſently after, we were met by Towha, who received me with great courteſy. He took me by the one hand, and Tee by the other; and, without my knowing where they intended to carry me, dragged me, as it were, through the crowd that was divided into two parties, both of which profeſſed themſelves my friends by crying out *Tiyo no Tootee*. Tueſday 26.

1774. April. Tueſday 26. One party wanted me to go to Otoo, and the other to remain with Towha. Coming to the uſual place of audience, a mat was ſpread for me to ſit down upon, and Tee left me to go and bring the king. Towha was unwilling I ſhould ſit down, partly inſiſting on my going with him; but, as I knew nothing of this chief, I refuſed to comply. Preſently Tee returned, and wanted to conduct me to the king, taking hold of my hand for that purpoſe. This Towha oppoſed; ſo that, between the one party and the other, I was like to have been torn in pieces; and was obliged to deſire Tee to deſiſt, and to leave me to the admiral and his party, who conducted me down to the fleet. As ſoon as we came before the admiral's veſſel, we found two lines of armed men drawn up before her, to keep off the crowd, as I ſuppoſed, and to clear the way for me to go in. But, as I was determined not to go, I made the water, which was between me and her, an excuſe. This did not anſwer; for a man immediately ſquatted himſelf down at my feet, offering to carry me; and then I declared I would not go. That very moment Towha quitted me, without my ſeeing which way he went, nor would any one inform me. Turning myſelf round I ſaw Tee, who, I believe, had never loſt ſight of me. Inquiring of him for the king, he told me he was gone into the country *Mataou*, and adviſed me to go to my boat; which we accordingly did, as ſoon as we could get collected together. For Mr. Edgcumbe was the only perſon that could keep with me; the others being joſtled about in the crowd, in the ſame manner we had been.

When we got into our boat we took our time to view this grand fleet. The veſſels of war conſiſted of an hundred and ſixty large double canoes, very well equipped, manned, and armed.

armed. But I am not ſure that they had their full complement of men or rowers; I rather think not. The chiefs, and all thoſe on the fighting ſtages, were dreſſed in their war habits; that is, in a vaſt quantity of cloth, turbans, breaſt-plates, and helmets. Some of the latter were of ſuch a length as greatly to incumber the wearer. Indeed, their whole dreſs ſeemed to be ill calculated for the day of battle, and to be deſigned more for ſhew than uſe. Be this as it may, it certainly added grandeur to the proſpect, as they were ſo complaiſant as to ſhew themſelves to the beſt advantage. The veſſels were decorated with flags, ſtreamers, &c.; ſo that the whole made a grand and noble appearance, ſuch as we had never ſeen before in this ſea, and what no one would have expected. Their inſtruments of war were clubs, ſpears, and ſtones. The veſſels were ranged cloſe along-ſide of each other, with their heads aſhore, and their ſtern to the ſea; the admiral's veſſel being nearly in the centre. Beſides the veſſels of war, there were an hundred and ſeventy ſail of ſmaller double canoes, all with a little houſe upon them, and rigged with maſt and ſail, which the war canoes had not. Theſe, we judged, were deſigned for tranſports, victuallers, &c.; for in the war canoes was no ſort of proviſions whatever. In theſe three hundred and thirty veſſels I gueſſed there were no leſs than ſeven thouſand ſeven hundred and ſixty men; a number which appears incredible, eſpecially as we were told they all belonged to the diſtricts of Attahourou and Ahopatea. In this computation I allow to each war canoe forty men, troops and rowers, and to each of the ſmall canoes eight. Moſt of the gentlemen who were with me, thought the number of men belonging to the war canoes exceeded this. It is certain that the moſt of them were fitted to row with more paddles than I have allowed

1774. April. Tueſday 23.

1774. April. Tueſday 26.

lowed them men; but, at this time, I think they were not complete. Tupia informed us, when I was firſt here, that the whole iſland raiſed only between ſix and ſeven thouſand men; but we now ſaw two diſtricts only raiſe that number; ſo that he muſt have taken his account from ſome old eſtabliſhment; or elſe he only meant *Tatatous*, that is warriors, or men trained from their infancy to arms, and did not include the rowers, and thoſe neceſſary to navigate the other veſſels. I ſhould think he only ſpoke of this number as the ſtanding troops or militia of the iſland, and not their whole force. This point I ſhall leave to be diſcuſſed in another place, and return to the ſubject.

After we had well viewed this fleet, I wanted much to have ſeen the admiral, to have gone with him on board the war canoes. We inquired for him as we rowed paſt the fleet to no purpoſe. We put aſhore and inquired; but the noiſe and crowd was ſo great that no one attended to what we ſaid. At laſt Tee came and whiſpered us in the ear, that Otoo was gone to Matavai, adviſing us to return thither, and not to land where we were. We, accordingly, proceeded for the ſhip; and this intelligence and advice received from Tee, gave riſe to new conjectures. In ſhort, we concluded that this Towha was ſome powerful diſaffected chief, who was upon the point of making war againſt his ſovereign; for we could not imagine Otoo had any other reaſon for leaving Oparree in the manner he did.

We had not been long gone from Oparree, before the whole fleet was in motion, to the weſtward, from whence it came. When we got to Matavai, our friends there told us, that this fleet was part of the armament intended to go againſt Eimeo, whoſe chief had thrown off the yoke of Ota-

heite, and aſſumed an independency. We were likewiſe informed that Otoo neither was nor had been at Matavai; ſo that we were ſtill at a loſs to know why he fled from Oparree. This occaſioned another trip thither in the afternoon, where we found him, and now underſtood that the reaſon of his not ſeeing me in the morning, was that ſome of his people having ſtolen a quantity of my clothes which were on ſhore waſhing, he was afraid I ſhould demand reſtitution. He repeatedly aſked me if I was not angry; and when I aſſured him that I was not, and that they might keep what they had got, he was ſatisfied. Towha was alarmed, partly on the ſame account. He thought I was diſpleaſed when I refuſed to go aboard his veſſel; and I was jealous of ſeeing ſuch a force in our neighbourhood without being able to know any thing of its deſign. Thus, by miſtaking one another, I loſt the opportunity of examining more narrowly into part of the naval force of this iſle, and making myſelf better acquainted with its manœuvres. Such an opportunity may never occur; as it was commanded by a brave, ſenſible, and intelligent chief, who would have ſatisfied us in all the queſtions we had thought proper to aſk; and, as the objects were before us, we could not well have miſunderſtood each other. It happened unluckily that Oedidee was not with us in the morning; for Tee, who was the only man we could depend on, ſerved only to perplex us. Matters being thus cleared up, and mutual preſents having paſſed between Otoo and me, we took leave and returned on board.

1774. April. Tueſday 26.

CHAP. XII.

Some Account of a Viſit from Otoo, Towha, and ſeveral other Chiefs; alſo of a Robbery committed by one of the Natives, and its Conſequences, with general Obſervations on the Subject.

1774. April. Wedneſ. 27. IN the morning of the 27th, I received a preſent from Towha, conſiſting of two large hogs and ſome fruit, ſent by two of his ſervants, who had orders not to receive any thing in return; nor would they when offered them. Soon after, I went down to Oparree in my boat, where having found both this chief and the king, after a ſhort ſtay, I brought them both on board to dinner, together with Tarevatoo the king's younger brother, and Tee. As ſoon as we drew near the ſhip, the admiral, who had never ſeen one before, began to expreſs much ſurprize at ſo new a ſight. He was conducted all over the ſhip, every part of which he viewed with great attention. On this occaſion Otoo was the principal ſhew-man; for, by this time, he was well acquainted with the different parts of the ſhip. After dinner Towha put a hog on board, and retired, without my knowing any thing of the matter, or having made him any return either for this, or the preſent I had in the morning. Soon after, the king and his attendants went away alſo. Otoo not only ſeemed to pay this chief much reſpect, but was deſirous I ſhould do the ſame; and yet he was jealous of him, but on what account we knew not. It was but the day before

before that he frankly told us, Towha was not his friend. Both theſe chiefs when on board ſolicited me to aſſiſt them againſt Tiarabou, notwithſtanding a peace at this time ſubſiſted between the two kingdoms, and we were told that their joint force was to go againſt Eimeo. Whether this was done with a view of breaking with their neighbours and allies, if I had promiſed them aſſiſtance, or only to ſound my diſpoſition, I know not. Probably they would have been ready enough to have embraced an opportunity, which would have enabled them to conquer that kingdom, and annex it to their own, as it was formerly: be this as it may, I heard no more of it; indeed, I gave them no encouragement. 1774. April. Wedneſ. 27.

Next day we had a preſent of a hog ſent by Wahea toua king of Tiarabou. For this, in return, he deſired a few red feathers, which were, together with other things, ſent him accordingly. Mr. Forſter and his party ſet out for the mountains, with an intent to ſtay out all night. I did not go out of the ſhip this day. Thurſday 28.

Early in the morning of the 29th, Otoo, Towha, and ſeveral other grandees, came on board, and brought with them, as preſents, not only proviſions, but ſome of the moſt valuable curioſities of the iſland. I made them returns, with which they were well pleaſed. I likewiſe took this opportunity to repay the civilities I had received from Towha. Friday 29.

The night before, one of the natives attempting to ſteal a water-caſk from the watering-place, he was caught in the act, ſent on board, and put in irons; in which ſituation Otoo and the other chiefs ſaw him. Having made known his crime to them, Otoo begged he might be ſet at liberty. This I refuſed,

1774. April. Friday 29.

I refuſed, telling him, that ſince I puniſhed my people, when they committed the leaſt offence againſt his, it was but juſt this man ſhould be puniſhed alſo; and, as I knew he would not do it, I was reſolved to do it myſelf. Accordingly, I ordered the man to be carried on ſhore to the tents, and having followed myſelf, with Otoo, Towha, and others, I ordered the guard out, under arms, and the man to be tied up to a poſt. Otoo, his ſiſter, and ſome others begged hard for him; Towha ſaid not one word, but was very attentive to every thing going forward. I expoſtulated with Otoo on the conduct of this man, and of his people in general; telling him, that neither I, nor any of my people, took any thing from them, without firſt paying for it; enumerating the articles we gave in exchange for ſuch and ſuch things, and urging that it was wrong in them to ſteal from us who were their friends. I, moreover, told him, that the puniſhing this man would be the means of ſaving the lives of others of his people, by deterring them from committing crimes of this nature, in which ſome would certainly be ſhot dead, one time or another: with theſe and other arguments, which I believe he pretty well underſtood, he ſeemed ſatisfied, and only deſired the man might not be *Matteerou* (or killed). I then ordered the crowd, which was very great, to be kept at a proper diſtance, and, in the preſence of them all, ordered the fellow two dozen of laſhes with a cat-of-nine-tails, which he bore with great firmneſs, and was then ſet at liberty. After this the natives were going away; but Towha ſtepped forth, called them back, and harangued them for near half an hour. His ſpeech conſiſted of ſhort ſentences, very little of which I underſtood; but, from what we could gather, he recapitulated part of what I had ſaid to Otoo; named ſeveral advantages they had received from us; condemned

condemned their preſent conduct, and recommended a different one for the future. The gracefulneſs of his action, and the attention with which he was heard, beſpoke him a great orator. 1774. April. Friday 29.

Otoo ſaid not one word. As ſoon as Towha had ended his ſpeech, I ordered the marines to go through their exerciſe, and to load and fire in vollies with ball; and as they were very quick in their manœuvres, it is eaſier to conceive than to deſcribe the amazement the natives were under, the whole time, eſpecially thoſe who had not ſeen any thing of the kind before.

This being over, the chiefs took leave and retired with all their attendants, ſcarcely more pleaſed than frightened at what they had ſeen. In the evening Mr. Forſter and his party returned from the mountains, where he had ſpent the night; having found ſome new plants, and ſome others which grew in New Zealand. He ſaw Huaheine, which lies forty leagues to the weſtward; by which a judgment may be formed of the height of the mountains in Otaheite.

Next morning I had an opportunity to ſee the people of ten war canoes go through part of their paddling exerciſe. They had put off from the ſhore before I was appriſed of it; ſo that I was only preſent at their landing. They were properly equipped for war, the warriors with their arms, and dreſſed in their war habits, &c. In landing I obſerved that the moment the canoe touched the ground, all the rowers leaped out, and, with the aſſiſtance of a few people on the ſhore, dragged the canoe on dry land to her proper place; which being done, every one walked off with his paddle, &c. All this was executed with ſuch expedition, that, in five minutes time after putting aſhore, you could not tell that Saturday 30.

any

1774. April. Saturday 30.

any thing of the kind had been going forward. I thought theſe veſſels were thinly manned with rowers; the moſt being not above thirty, and the leaſt ſixteen or eighteen. I obſerved the warriors on the ſtage encouraged the rowers to exert themſelves. Some youths ſat high up in the curved ſtern, above the ſteerſmen, with white wands in their hands. I know not what they were placed there for; unleſs it was to look out, and direct, or give notice of what they ſaw, as they were elevated above every one elſe. Tarevatoo, the king's brother, gave me the firſt notice of theſe canoes being at ſea; and knowing that Mr. Hodges made drawings of every thing curious, deſired, of his own accord, that he might be ſent for. I being at this time on ſhore with Tarevatoo, Mr. Hodges was therefore with me, and had an opportunity to collect ſome materials for a large drawing or picture of the fleet aſſembled at Oparree, which will convey a far better idea of it than can be expreſſed by words. Being preſent when the warriors undreſſed, I was ſurpriſed at the quantity and weight of cloth they had upon them, not conceiving how it was poſſible for them to ſtand under it in time of battle. Not a little was wrapped round their heads as a turban, and made into a cap. This indeed might be neceſſary in preventing a broken head. Many had, fixed to one of this ſort of caps, dried branches of ſmall ſhrubs covered over with white feathers; which, however, could only be for ornament.

May. Sunday 1. Monday 2.

I had a very great ſupply of proviſions, ſent, and brought by different chiefs, on the 1ſt of May; and the next day received a preſent from Towha, ſent by his ſervants, conſiſting of a hog, and a boat load of various ſorts of fruit and roots. The like preſent I alſo had from Otoo, brought by Tarevatoo, who

who ſtayed dinner; after which I went down to Oparree, paid a viſit to Otoo, and returned on board in the evening. 1774. May.

On the 3d, in looking into the condition of our ſea proviſions, we found that the biſcuit was in a ſtate of decay, and that the airing and picking we had given it at New Zealand, had not been of that ſervice we expected and intended; ſo that we were obliged to take it all on ſhore here, where it underwent another airing and cleaning, in which a good deal was found wholly rotten and unfit to be eaten. We could not well account for this decay in our bread, eſpecially as it was packed in good caſks, and ſtowed in a dry part of the hold. We judged it was owing to the ice we ſo frequently took in when to the ſouthward, which made the hold damp and cold, and to the great heat which ſucceeded when to the North. Be it this, or any other cauſe, the loſs was equal to us: it put us to ſcanty allowance of this article; and we had bad bread to eat too. Tueſday 3.

On the 4th, nothing worthy of note. Wedneſ. 4.

On the 5th, the king, and ſeveral other great men, paid us a viſit, and brought with them, as uſual, ſome hogs and fruit. In the afternoon, the botaniſts ſet out for the mountains, and returned the following evening, having made ſome new diſcoveries in their way. Thurſday 5. Friday 6.

On going aſhore in the morning of the 7th, I found Otoo at the tents, and took the opportunity to aſk his leave to cut down ſome trees for fuel. He not well underſtanding me, I took him to ſome growing near the ſea-ſhore, where I preſently made him comprehend what I wanted, and he as readily gave his conſent. I told him, at the ſame time, that I ſhould cut down no trees that bore any fruit. He was Saturday 7.

1774. May. Saturday 7. pleaſed with this declaration, and told it aloud, ſeveral times, to the people about us. In the afternoon, he and the whole royal family, viz. his father, brother, and three ſiſters, paid us a viſit on board. This was properly his father's viſit of ceremony. He brought me, as a preſent, a complete mourning dreſs, a curioſity we moſt valued. In return, I gave him whatever he deſired, which was not a little, and having diſtributed red feathers to all the others, conducted them aſhore in my boat. Otoo was ſo well pleaſed with the reception he and his friends met with, that he told me, at parting, I might cut down as many trees as I pleaſed, and what ſort I pleaſed.

Sunday 8. During the night, between the 7th and 8th, ſome time in the middle watch, all our friendly connections received an interruption, through the negligence of one of the centinels on ſhore. He, having either ſlept or quitted his poſt, gave one of the natives an opportunity to carry off his muſquet. The firſt news I heard of it was from Tee, whom Otoo had ſent on board for that purpoſe, and to deſire that I would go to him, for that he was *mataoued*. We were not well enough acquainted with their language to underſtand all Tee's ſtory; but we underſtood enough to know that ſomething had happened, which had alarmed the king. In order, therefore, to be fully informed, I went aſhore with Tee and Tarevatoo, who had ſlept aboard all night. As ſoon as we landed, I was informed of the whole by the ſerjeant who commanded the party. I found the natives all alarmed, and the moſt of them fled. Tarevatoo ſlipped from me in a moment, and hardly any remained by me but Tee. With him I went to look for Otoo; and, as we advanced, I endeavoured to allay the fears of the people, but at the ſame time inſiſted on the

muſquet being reſtored. After travelling ſome diſtance into the country, enquiring of every one we ſaw for Otoo, Tee ſtopped all at once and adviſed me to return, ſaying that Otoo was gone to the mountains, and he would proceed and tell him that I was ſtill his friend; a queſtion which had been aſked me fifty times by different people, and if I was angry, &c. Tee alſo promiſed that he would uſe his endeavours to recover the muſquet. I was now ſatisfied it was to no purpoſe to go farther; for, although I was alone and unarmed, Otoo's fears were ſuch, that he durſt not ſee me; and therefore I took Tee's advice, and returned aboard. After this I ſent Oedidee to Otoo to let him know that his fears were ill-grounded; for that I only required the return of the muſquet, which I knew was in his power.

1774. May. Sunday 8.

Soon after Oedidee was gone, we obſerved ſix large canoes coming round Point Venus. Some people whom I had ſent out, to watch the conduct of the neighbouring inhabitants, informed me they were laden with baggage, fruit, hogs, &c. There being room for ſuſpecting that ſome perſon belonging to theſe canoes had committed the theft, I preſently came to a reſolution to intercept them; and having put off in a boat for that purpoſe, gave orders for another to follow. One of the canoes, which was ſome diſtance ahead of the reſt, came directly for the ſhip. I went along-ſide this, and found two or three women in her whom I knew. They told me they were going on board the ſhip with ſomething for me; and, on my inquiring of them for Otoo, was told he was then at the tents. Pleaſed with this news, I contradicted the orders I had given for intercepting the other canoes, thinking they might be coming on board alſo, as well as this one, which I left within a few yards of the ſhip, and rowed aſhore

1774. May. Sunday 8. to ſpeak with Otoo. But when I landed I was told that he had not been there, nor knew they any thing of him. On my looking behind me, I ſaw all the canoes making off in the greateſt haſte; even the one I had left along-ſide the ſhip had evaded going on board, and was making her eſcape. Vexed at being thus outwitted, I reſolved to purſue them; and, as I paſſed the ſhip, gave orders to ſend another boat for the ſame purpoſe. Five out of ſix we took, and brought along-ſide; but the firſt, which acted the fineſſe ſo well, got clear off. When we got on board with our prizes, I learnt that the people who had deceived me, uſed no endeavours to lay hold of the ſhip on the ſide they were upon, but let their canoe drop paſt as if they meant to come under the ſtern, or on the other ſide; and that the moment they were paſt, they paddled off with all ſpeed. Thus the canoe, in which were only a few women, was to have amuſed us with falſe ſtories, as they actually did, while the others, in which were moſt of the effects, got off.

In one of the canoes we had taken, was a chief, a friend of Mr. Forſter's, who had hitherto called himſelf an *Earee*, and would have been much offended if any one had called his title in queſtion; alſo three women, his wife and daughter, and the mother of the late Toutaha. Theſe, together with the canoes, I reſolved to detain, and to ſend the chief to Otoo, thinking he would have weight enough with him to obtain the return of the muſquet, as his own property was at ſtake. He was, however, very unwilling to go on this embaſſy, and made various excuſes, one of which was his being of too low a rank for this honourable employment; ſaying he was no *Earee*, but a *Manahouna*, and therefore was not a fit perſon to be ſent; that an *Earee* ought to be ſent to

ſpeak

ſpeak to an *Earee*; and, as there were no *Earees* but Otoo and myſelf, it would be much more proper for me to go. All his arguments would have availed him little, if Tee and Oedidee had not, at this time, come on board and given a new turn to the affair, by declaring that the man who ſtole the muſquet was from Tiarabou, and had gone with it to that kingdom, ſo that it was not in the power of Otoo to recover it. I very much doubted their veracity, till they aſked me to ſend a boat to Waheatoua the king of Tiarabou, and offered to go themſelves in her, and get it. I aſked why this could not be done without my ſending a boat? They ſaid it would not otherwiſe be given to them. 1774. May. Sunday 8.

This ſtory of theirs, although it did not quite ſatisfy me, nevertheleſs carried with it the probability of truth; for which reaſon I thought it better to drop the affair altogether, rather than to puniſh a nation for a crime I was not ſure any of its members had committed. I therefore ſuffered my new ambaſſador to depart with his two canoes without executing his commiſſion. The other three canoes belonged to Maritata a Tiarabou chief, who had been ſome days about the tents; and there was good reaſon to believe it was one of his people that carried off the muſquet. I intended to have detained them; but as Tee and Oedidee both aſſured me that Maritata and his people were quite innocent, I ſuffered them to be taken away alſo, and deſired Tee to tell Otoo, that I ſhould give myſelf no farther concern about the muſquet, ſince I was ſatisfied none of his people had ſtolen it. Indeed, I thought it was irrecoverably loſt; but, in the duſk of the evening, it was brought to the tents, together with ſome other things we had loſt, which we knew nothing of, by three men who had purſued the thief and taken them from

1774. May. Sunday 8. from him. I know not, if they took this trouble of their own accord, or by order of Otoo. I rewarded them, and made no farther inquiry about it. Theſe men, as well as ſome others preſent, aſſured me that it was one of Maritata's people who had committed this theft; which vexed me that I had let his canoes ſo eaſily ſlip through my fingers. Here, I believe, both Tee and Oedidee deſignedly deceived me.

When the muſquet and other things were brought in, every one then preſent, or who came after, pretended to have had ſome hand in recovering them, and claimed a reward accordingly. But there was no one who acted this farce ſo well as Nuno, a man of ſome note, and well known to us when I was here in 1769. This man came, with all the ſavage fury imaginable in his countenance, and a large club in his hand, with which he beat about him, in order to ſhew us how he alone had killed the thief; when, at the ſame time, we all knew that he had not been out of his houſe the whole time.

Monday 9. Thus ended this troubleſome day; and next morning early, Tee, Otoo's faithful ambaſſador, came again on board, to acquaint me that Otoo was gone to Oparree, and deſired I would ſend a perſon (one of the natives as I underſtood), to tell him that I was ſtill his *Tiyo*. I aſked him why he did not do this himſelf, as I had deſired. He made ſome excuſe; but, I believe, the truth was, he had not ſeen him. In ſhort, I found it was neceſſary for me to go myſelf; for, while we thus ſpent our time in meſſages, we remained without fruit, a ſtop being put to all exchanges of this nature; that is, the natives brought nothing to market. Accordingly, a party of us ſet out, with Tee in our company, and proceeded to the very utmoſt limits of Oparree, where, after waiting

waiting ſome conſiderable time, and ſeveral meſſages having paſſed, the king, at laſt, made his appearance. After we were ſeated under the ſhade of ſome trees, as uſual, and the firſt ſalutations were over, he deſired me to *parou* (that is, to ſpeak). Accordingly, I began with blaming him for being frightened and alarmed at what had happened, ſince I had always profeſſed myſelf his friend, and I was not angry with him or any of his people, but with thoſe of Tiarabou, who were the thieves. I was then aſked, how I came to fire at the canoes? Chance, on this occaſion, furniſhed me with a good excuſe. I told them, that they belonged to Maritata, a Tiarabou man, one of whoſe people had ſtolen the muſquet, and occaſioned all this diſturbance, and if I had them in my power I would deſtroy them, or any other belonging to Tiarabou. This declaration pleaſed them, as I expected, from the natural averſion the one kingdom has to the other. What I ſaid was enforced by preſents, which, perhaps, had the greateſt weight with them. Thus were things once more reſtored to their former ſtate; and Otoo promiſed on his part, that, the next day, we ſhould be ſupplied with fruit, &c. as uſual.

1774. May. Monday 9.

We then returned with him to his proper reſidence at Oparree, and there took a view of ſome of his dock-yards (for ſuch they well deſerved to be called) and large canoes; ſome lately built and others building; two of which were the largeſt I had ever ſeen in this ſea; or, indeed, any where elſe, under that name. This done, we returned on board, with Tee in our company; who, after he had dined with us, went to inform old Happi, the king's father, that all matters were accommodated.

This

1774. May. Monday 9. This old chief was, at this time, in the neighbourhood of Matavai; and it ſhould ſeem, from what followed, that he was not pleaſed with the conditions; for, that ſame evening, all the women, which were not a few, were ſent for out of the ſhip, and people ſtationed, on different parts of the ſhore, to prevent any from coming off; and, the next Tueſday 10. morning, no ſupplies whatever being brought, on my inquiring into the reaſon, I was told Happi was *mataoued*. Chagrined at this diſappointment as I was, I forbore taking any ſtep, from a ſuppoſition that Tee had not ſeen him, or that Otoo's orders had not yet reached Matavai. A ſupply of fruit ſent us from Oparree, and ſome brought us by our friends, ſerved us for the preſent, and made us leſs anxious about it. Thus matters ſtood till the afternoon, when Otoo himſelf came to the tents with a large ſupply. Thither I went, and expoſtulated with him for not permitting the people in our neighbourhood to bring us fruit as uſual, inſiſting on his giving immediate orders about it; which he either did, or had done before. For, preſently after, more was brought us than we could well manage. This was not to be wondered at; for the people had every thing in readineſs to bring, the moment they were permitted, and, I believe, thought themſelves as much injured by the reſtriction as we did.

Otoo deſiring to ſee ſome of the great guns fire from the ſhip, I ordered twelve to be ſhotted and fired towards the ſea. As he had never ſeen a cannon fired before, the ſight gave him as much pain as pleaſure. In the evening, we entertained him with fire-works, which gave him great ſatisfaction.

Thus

1774. May. Tueſday 10.

Thus ended all our differences, on which I beg leave to ſuggeſt the following remarks. I have had occaſion, in this journal before, to obſerve that theſe people were continually watching opportunities to rob us. This their governors either encouraged, or had not power to prevent; but moſt probably the former, becauſe the offender was always ſcreened. That they ſhould commit ſuch daring thefts was the more extraordinary, as they frequently run the riſque of being ſhot in the attempt; and if the article that they ſtole was of any conſequence, they knew they ſhould be obliged to make reſtitution. The moment a theft of this kind was committed, it ſpread like the wind over the whole neighbourhood. They judged of the conſequences from what they had got. If it were a trifle, and ſuch an article as we uſually gave them, little or no notice was taken of it; but if the contrary, every one took the alarm, and moved off with his moveables in all haſte. The chief then was *mataoued*, giving orders to bring us no ſupplies, and flying to ſome diſtant part. All this was ſometimes done ſo ſuddenly, that we obtained, by theſe appearances, the firſt intelligence of our being robbed. Whether we obliged them to make reſtitution or no, the chief muſt be reconciled, before any of the people were permitted to bring in any refreſhments. They knew very well we could not do without them, and therefore never failed ſtrictly to obſerve this rule, without ever conſidering, that all their war canoes, on which the ſtrength of their nation depends, their houſes, and even the very fruit they refuſed to ſupply us with, were entirely in our power. It is hard to ſay how they would act, were one to deſtroy any of theſe things. Except the detaining ſome of their canoes for a while, I never touched the leaſt article

1774. May. Tueſday 10.

of their property. Of the two extremes I always choſe that which appeared the moſt equitable and mild. A trifling preſent to the chief always ſucceeded to my wiſh, and very often put things upon a better footing than they had been before. That they were the firſt aggreſſors had very little influence on my conduct in this reſpect, becauſe no difference happened but when it was ſo. My people very rarely or never broke through the rules I thought it neceſſary to preſcribe. Had I obſerved a different conduct, I muſt have been the loſer by it in the end; and all I could expect, after deſtroying ſome part of their property, would have been the empty honour of obliging them to make the firſt overture towards an accommodation. But who knows if this would have been the event? Three things made them our faſt friends. Their own good nature and benevolent diſpoſition; gentle treatment on our part; and the dread of our fire-arms. By our ceaſing to obſerve the ſecond, the firſt would have worn out of courſe; and the too frequent uſe of the latter would have excited a ſpirit of revenge, and perhaps have taught them that fire-arms were not ſuch terrible things as they had imagined. They were very ſenſible of the ſuperiority of their numbers; and no one knows what an enraged multitude might do.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIII.

Preparations to leave the Iſland. Another Naval Review, and various other Incidents; with ſome Account of the Iſland, its naval Force, and Number of Inhabitants.

IN the morning of the 11th, a very large ſupply of fruit was brought us from all parts. Some of it came from Towha the admiral, ſent as uſual by his ſervants, with orders to receive nothing in return. But he deſired I would go and ſee him at Attahourou, as he was ill and could not come to me. As I could not well undertake this journey, I ſent Oedidee, along with Towha's ſervants, with a preſent ſuitable to that which I had, in ſo genteel a manner, received from him. As the moſt eſſential repairs of the ſhip were nearly finiſhed, I reſolved to leave Otaheite in a few days; and accordingly ordered every thing to be got off from the ſhore, that the natives might ſee we were about to depart. 1774. May. Wedneſ. 11.

On the 12th, old Oberea, the woman, who, when the Dolphin was here in 1767, was thought to be queen of the iſland, and whom I had not ſeen ſince 1769, paid us a viſit, and brought a preſent of hogs and fruit. Soon after, came Otoo with a great retinue, and a large quantity of proviſions. I was pretty liberal in my returns, thinking it might be the laſt time I ſhould ſee theſe good people, who had ſo liberally relieved our wants; and, in the evening, entertained them with fire-works. Thurſday 12.

1774. May. Friday 13. On the 13th, winds eaſterly, fair weather. Nevertheleſs, we were not ready to ſail, as Otoo had made me promiſe to ſee him again; and I had a preſent to make him, which I reſerved to the laſt. Oedidee was not yet come back from Attahourou; various reports aroſe concerning him; ſome ſaid he had returned to Matavai; others that he would not return; and ſome would have it that he was at Oparree. In order to know more of the truth, a party of us in the evening went down to Oparree; where we found him, and likewiſe Towha, who, notwithſtanding his illneſs, had reſolved to ſee me before I ſailed, and had gotten thus far on his journey. He was afflicted with a ſwelling in his feet and legs, which had entirely taken away the uſe of them. As the day was far ſpent we were obliged to ſhorten our ſtay; and, after ſeeing Otoo, we returned with Oedidee on board.

This youth, I found, was deſirous of remaining at this iſle, having, before, told him, as likewiſe many others, that we ſhould not return. I now mentioned to him that he was at liberty to remain here; or to quit us at Ulietea; or to go with us to England; frankly owning that if he choſe the latter, it was very probable he would never return to his country; in which caſe I would take care of him, and he muſt afterwards look upon me as his father. He threw his arms about me, and wept much, ſaying many people perſuaded him to remain at Otaheite. I told him to go aſhore and ſpeak to his friends, and then come to me in the morning. He was well beloved in the ſhip; ſo that every one was perſuading him to go with us; telling him what great things he would ſee in England, and the immenſe riches (according to his idea of riches) he would return with. But I thought proper to undeceive him, as knowing that the

only inducement to his going, was the expectation of returning, and I could ſee no proſpect of an opportunity of that kind happening, unleſs a ſhip ſhould be expreſsly ſent out for that purpoſe; which neither I, nor any one elſe, had a right to expect. I thought it an act of the higheſt injuſtice to take a perſon from theſe iſles, under any promiſe which was not in my power to perform. At this time, indeed, it was quite unneceſſary; for many youths voluntarily offered themſelves to go, and even to remain and die in *Pretanee*; as they call our country. Otoo importuned me much to take one or two, to collect red feathers for him at Amſterdam, willing to riſque the chance of their returning. Some of the gentlemen on board were likewiſe deſirous of taking ſome as ſervants; but I refuſed every ſolicitation of this kind, knowing, from experience, they would be of no uſe to us in the courſe of the voyage; and farther my views were not extended. What had the greateſt weight with me, was the thinking myſelf bound to ſee they were afterwards properly taken care of, as they could not be carried from their native ſpot without conſent. 1774. May. Friday 13.

Next morning early, Oedidee came on board with a reſolution to remain at the iſland; but Mr. Forſter prevailed upon him to go with us to Ulietea. Soon after, Towha, Poatatou, Oamo, Happi, Oberea, and ſeveral more of our friends, came on board with fruit, &c. Towha was hoiſted in and placed on a chair on the quarter-deck; his wife was with him. Amongſt the various articles which I gave this chief, was an Engliſh pendant, which pleaſed him more than all the reſt, eſpecially after he had been inſtructed in the uſe of it. Saturday 14.

We

1774. May. Saturday 14.

We had no ſooner diſpatched our friends than we ſaw a number of war canoes coming round the point of Oparree. Being deſirous of having a nearer view of them, accompanied by ſome of the officers and gentlemen, I haſtened down to Oparree, which we reached before all the canoes were landed, and had an opportunity of ſeeing in what manner they approached the ſhore. When they got before the place where they intended to land, they formed themſelves into diviſions, conſiſting of three or four, or perhaps more, laſhed ſquare and cloſe along-ſide of each other; and then each diviſion, one after the other, paddled in for the ſhore with all their might, and conducted in ſo judicious a manner that they formed, and cloſed a line, along the ſhore, to an inch. The rowers were encouraged to exert their ſtrength by their leaders on the ſtages, and directed by a man who ſtood with a wand in his hand in the fore-part of the middlemoſt veſſel. This man, by words and actions, directed the paddlers when all ſhould paddle, when either the one ſide or the other ſhould ceaſe, &c.; for the ſteering paddles alone were not ſufficient to direct them. All theſe motions they obſerved with ſuch quickneſs as clearly ſhewed them to be expert in their buſineſs. After Mr. Hodges had made a drawing of them, as they lay ranged along the ſhore, we landed, and took a nearer view of them by going on board ſeveral. This fleet conſiſted of forty ſail, equipped in the ſame manner as thoſe we had ſeen before, belonged to the little diſtrict of Tettaha, and were come to Oparree to be reviewed before the king, as the former fleet had been. There were attending on this fleet ſome ſmall double canoes, which they called *Marais*, having on their fore-part a kind of double bed-place laid over with green leaves, each juſt ſufficient to hold one man. Theſe they told us, were to lay their dead upon; their

1774. May. Saturday 14.

their chiefs, I ſuppoſe they meant, otherwiſe their ſlain muſt be few. Otoo, who was preſent, cauſed, at my requeſt, ſome of their troops to go through their exerciſe on ſhore. Two parties firſt began with clubs, but this was over almoſt as ſoon as begun; ſo that I had no time to make my obſervations upon it. They then went to ſingle combat, and exhibited the various methods of fighting with great alertneſs; parrying off the blows and puſhes, which each combatant aimed at the other, with great dexterity. Their arms were clubs and ſpears; the latter they alſo uſe as darts. In fighting with the club, all blows intended to be given the legs, were evaded by leaping over it; and thoſe intended for the head, by couching a little and leaping on one ſide; thus the blow would fall to the ground. The ſpear or dart was parried, by fixing the point of a ſpear in the ground right before them, holding it in an inclined poſition, more or leſs elevated according to the part of the body they ſaw their antagoniſt intending to make a puſh, or throw his dart at, and by moving the hand a little to the right or left, either the one or the other was turned off with great eaſe. I thought that when one combatant had parried off the blows, &c. of the other, he did not uſe the advantage which ſeemed to me to accrue. As, for inſtance; after he had parried off a dart, he ſtill ſtood on the defenſive, and ſuffered his antagoniſt to take up another, when I thought there was time to run him through the body. Theſe combatants had no ſuperfluous dreſs upon them; an unneceſſary piece of cloth or two, which they had on when they began, were preſently torn off by the by-ſtanders, and given to ſome of our gentlemen preſent. This being over, the fleet departed; not in any order, but as faſt as they could be got afloat; and we went with Otoo to one of his dock-yards, where the two

1774. May. Saturday 14. large *pahies* or canoes were building, each of which was an hundred and eight feet long. They were almoſt ready to launch, and were intended to make one joint double *pahie* or canoe. The king begged of me a grappling and rope, to which I added an Engliſh jack and pendant (with the uſe of which he was well acquainted), and deſired the *pahie* might be called Britannia. This he very readily agreed to; and ſhe was named accordingly. After this he gave me a hog, and a turtle of about ſixty pounds weight, which was put privately into our boat; the giving it away not being agreeable to ſome of the great lords about him, who were thus deprived of a feaſt. He likewiſe would have given me a large ſhark they had priſoner in a creek (ſome of his fins being cut off ſo that he could not make his eſcape), but the fine pork and fiſh we had got at this iſle, had ſpoiled our palates for ſuch food. The king, and his prime miniſter Tee, accompanied us on board to dinner, and after it was over, took a moſt affectionate farewel. He hardly ever ceaſed ſoliciting me, this day, to return to Otaheite; and, juſt before he went out of the ſhip, took a youth by the hand, and preſented him to me, deſiring I would keep him on board to go to Amſterdam to collect red feathers. I told him I could not, ſince I knew he would never return; but that, if any ſhip ſhould happen to come from Britain to this iſle, I would either bring or ſend him red feathers in abundance. This, in ſome meaſure, ſatisfied him; but the youth was exceedingly deſirous of going; and, if I had not come to a reſolution to carry no one from the iſles (except Oedidee if he choſe to go), and but juſt refuſed Mr. Forſter the liberty of taking a boy, I believe I ſhould have conſented. Otoo remained along-ſide in his canoe till we were under ſail, when he put off, and was ſaluted with three guns.

Our

A Draught, Plan and Sect

secured

References to the Sections.

G. { *Several Sections shewing the Form of the Body at the spacing of the Timbers as named on the Sheer Draught.*

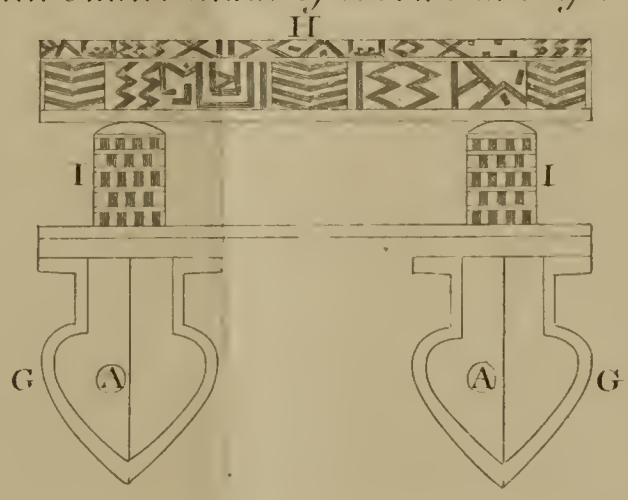
H. { *Platform at the Forepart of the Canoe for the Chiefs, or Warriours.*

I. *Pillars supporting the Platform.*

published Feb^y 1^st 1777 by W



…of the Britannia Otehite War Canoe, *Shewing Two in the Plan; their Distance being from out to Outside* 14 ft 3 in *and …h Beams and Fore and Aft Pieces of Timber lashed together with Sinnet made of Cocoa Nut Bafs.*



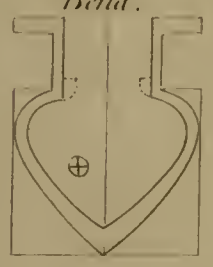
References to the Plan.

- L. *The Canoes*
- M. *Beams athwart*
- N. *Fore & aft pieces of Timber lashed to the Beams with Sinnet.*
- O. *Places for the Rowers or those that use Paddles in N.° 168.*
- A, B. *Fore part of the Canoe spacing of the Timbers as named on the Sheer Draught.*
- 1, 2, 3, 4, 5. *Aft part of the Canoe spacing of the Timbers.*
- P. *Pillars.*
- Q. *Seats or Thwarts*

Dimensions.

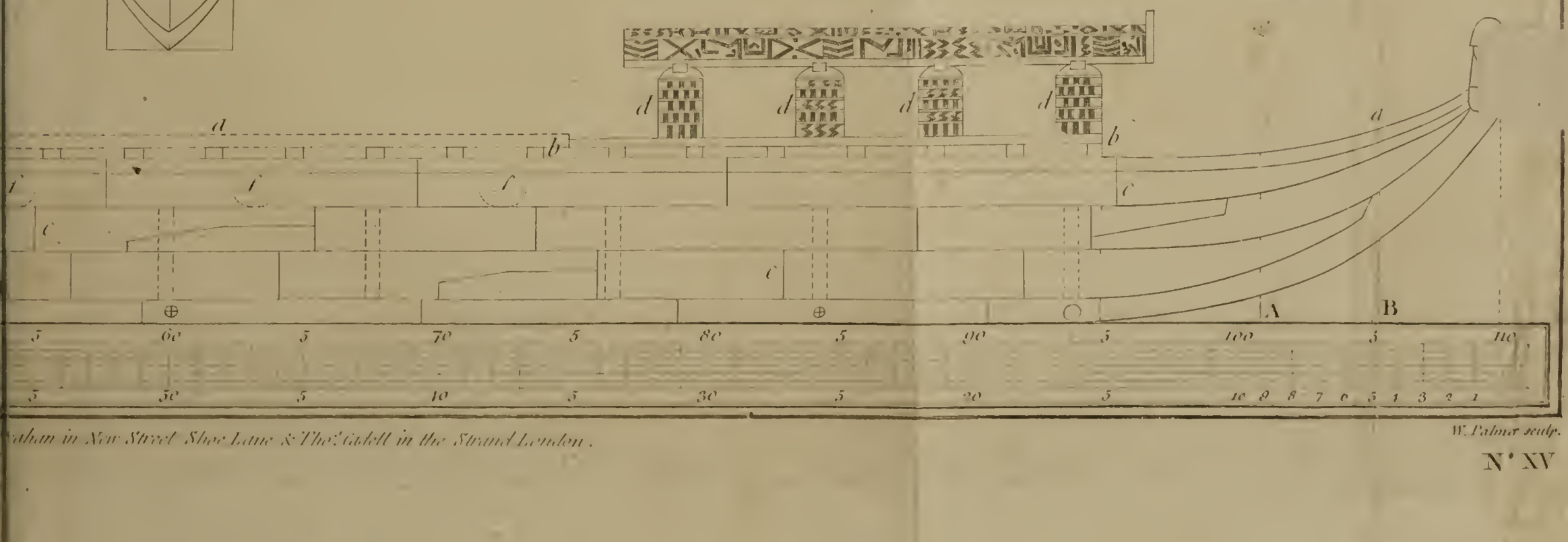
	ft	in.
Length	168	0
Breadth in Midships	1	8
Depth in Midships	0	0

Midship Bend.



References to the Sheer Draught.

- a. *The Sheer Draught.*
- b. *Beams.*
- c. *Skin of the Board at the bottom sewed together with Sinnet.*
- d. *Pillars cut Herring bone Fashion Shellowed withinside.*
- e. *Platform.*
- f. *Seats or Thwarts.*



…ham in New Street Shoe Lane & The Cadell in the Strand London.

W. Palmer sculp.

N.° XV

1774. May. Saturday 14.

Our treatment at this iſle was ſuch as had induced one of our gunner's mates to form a plan to remain at it. He knew he could not execute it with ſucceſs while we lay in the bay, therefore took the opportunity, as ſoon as we were out, the boats in, and ſails ſet, to ſlip overboard, being a good ſwimmer. But he was diſcovered before he got clear of the ſhip; and we preſently hoiſted a boat out, and took him up. A canoe was obſerved, about half-way between us and the ſhore, ſeemingly coming after us. She was intended to take him up; but as ſoon as the people in her ſaw our boat, they kept at a diſtance. This was a pre-concerted plan between the man and them, which Otoo was acquainted with, and had encouraged. When I conſidered this man's ſituation in life, I did not think him ſo culpable, nor the reſolution he had taken of ſtaying here ſo extraordinary, as it may, at firſt, appear. He was an Iriſhman by birth, and had ſailed in the Dutch ſervice. I picked him up at Batavia on my return from my former voyage, and he had been with me ever ſince. I never learnt that he had either friends or connexions, to confine him to any particular part of the world. All nations were alike to him. Where then could ſuch a man be more happy than at one of theſe iſles? Where, in one of the fineſt climates in the world, he could enjoy not only the neceſſaries, but the luxuries of life, in eaſe and plenty. I know not if he might not have obtained my conſent, if he had applied for it in proper time. As ſoon as we had got him on board, and the boat in, I ſteered for Huaheine, in order to pay a viſit to our friends there. But before we leave Otaheite it will be neceſſary to give ſome account of the preſent ſtate of that iſland; eſpecially as it differs very much from what it was eight months before.

1774. May.

I have already mentioned the improvements we found in the plains of Oparree and Matavai. The ſame was obſerved in every other part into which we came. It ſeemed to us almoſt incredible, that ſo many large canoes and houſes could be built in ſo ſhort a ſpace as eight months. The iron tools which they had got from the Engliſh, and other nations who have lately touched at the iſle, had, no doubt, greatly accelerated the work; and they have no want of hands, as I ſhall ſoon make appear.

The number of hogs was another thing that excited our wonder. Probably they were not ſo ſcarce, when we were here before, as we imagined, and, not chuſing to part with any, they had conveyed them out of our ſight. Be this as it may, we now not only got as many as we could conſume during our ſtay, but ſome to take to ſea with us.

When I was laſt here, I conceived but an unfavourable opinion of Otoo's talents. The improvements ſince made in the iſland convinced me of my miſtake; and that he muſt be a man of good parts. He has, indeed, ſome judicious ſenſible men about him; who, I believe, have a great ſhare in the government. In truth, we know not how far his power extends as king, nor how far he can command the aſſiſtance of the other chiefs, or is controulable by them. It ſhould, however, ſeem, that all have contributed towards bringing the iſle to its preſent flouriſhing ſtate. We cannot doubt that there are diviſions amongſt the great men of this ſtate, as well as of moſt others; or elſe why did the king tell us, that Towha the admiral, and Poatatou were not his friends? They were two leading chiefs; and he muſt be jealous of them on account of their great power; for, on every occaſion,

he ſeemed to court their intereſt. We had reaſon to believe that they raiſed by far the greateſt number of veſſels and men, to go againſt Eimeo, and were to be two of the commanders in the expedition, which we were told was to take place five days after our departure. Waheatoua king of Tiarabou was to ſend a fleet to join that of Otoo, to aſſiſt him in reducing to obedience the chief of Eimeo. I think, we were told, that young prince was one of the commanders. One would ſuppoſe that ſo ſmall an iſland as Eimeo would hardly have attempted to make head againſt the united force of theſe two kingdoms, but have endeavoured to ſettle matters by negociation. Yet we heard of no ſuch thing; on the contrary, every one ſpoke of nothing but fighting. Towha told us more than once that he ſhould die there; which, in ſome meaſure, ſhews that he thought of it. Oedidee told me the battle would be fought at ſea; in which caſe the other muſt have a fleet nearly equal, if not quite, to the one going againſt them; which I think was not probable. It was, therefore, more likely they would remain aſhore upon the defenſive; as we were told they did, about five or ſix years ago, when attacked by the people of Tiarabou whom they repulſed. Five general officers were to command in this expedition; of which number Otoo was one; and, if they named them in order according to the poſts they held, Otoo was only the third in command. This ſeems probable enough; as, being but a young man, he could not have ſufficient experience to command ſuch an expedition, where the greateſt ſkill and judgment ſeemed to be neceſſary. 1774. May.

I confeſs I would willingly have ſtaid five days longer, had I been ſure the expedition would have then taken place; but it rather ſeemed that they wanted us to be gone firſt. We

1774. May. had been, all along, told, it would be ten moons before it took place; and it was not till the evening before we ſailed, that Otoo and Towha told us it was to be in five days after we were gone; as if it were neceſſary to have that time to put every thing in order; for, while we lay there, great part of their time and attention was taken up with us. I had obſerved that, for ſeveral days before we ſailed, Otoo and the other chiefs had ceaſed to ſolicit my aſſiſtance, as they were continually doing at firſt, till I aſſured Otoo that, if they got their fleet ready in time, I would ſail with them down to Eimeo: after this I heard no more of it. They probably had taken it into conſideration, and concluded themſelves ſafer without me; well knowing it would be in my power to give the victory to whom I pleaſed, and that, at the beſt, I might thwart ſome favourite cuſtom, or run away with the ſpoils. But be their reaſons what they might, they certainly wanted us to be gone, before they undertook any thing. Thus we were deprived of ſeeing the whole fleet equipped on this occaſion; and perhaps of being ſpectators of a ſea-fight, and, by that means, gaining ſome knowledge of their manœuvres.

I never could learn what number of veſſels were to go on this expedition. We knew of no more than two hundred and ten, beſides ſmaller canoes to ſerve as tranſports, &c. and the fleet of Tiaraboù, the ſtrength of which we never learnt. Nor could I ever learn the number of men neceſſary to man this fleet; and whenever I aſked the queſtion, the anſwer was, *Warou, warou, warou te Tata*, that is, many, many, many men; as if the number far exceeded their arithmetic. If we allow forty men to each war canoe, and four to each of the others, which is thought a moderate computation,

tation, the number will amount to nine thouſand. An aſtoniſhing number to be raiſed in four diſtricts; and one of them, viz. Matavai, did not equip a fourth part of its fleet. The fleet of Tiarabou is not included in this account; and many other diſtricts might be arming which we knew nothing of. I, however, believe, that the whole iſle did not arm on this occaſion; for we ſaw not the leaſt preparations making in Oparree. From what we ſaw and could learn, I am clearly of opinion that the chief, or chiefs, of each diſtrict ſuperintended the equipping of the fleet belonging to that diſtrict; but, after they are equipped, they muſt paſs in review before the king, and be approved of by him. By this means he knows the ſtate of the whole, before they aſſemble to go on ſervice. 1774. May.

It hath been already obſerved, that the number of war canoes belonging to Attahourou and Ahopata was an hundred and ſixty, to Tettaha forty, and to Matavai ten, and that this diſtrict did not equip one-fourth part of their number. If we ſuppoſe every diſtrict in the iſland, of which there are forty-three, to raiſe and equip the ſame number of war canoes as Tettaha, we ſhall find, by this eſtimate, that the whole iſland can raiſe and equip one thouſand ſeven hundred and twenty war canoes, and ſixty-eight thouſand able men; allowing forty men to each canoe. And, as theſe cannot amount to above one-third part of the number of both ſexes, children included, the whole iſland cannot contain leſs than two hundred and four thouſand inhabitants; a number which, at firſt ſight, exceeded my belief. But, when I came to reflect on the vaſt ſwarms which appeared wherever we came, I was convinced that this eſtimate was not much, if at all, too great. There cannot be a greater proof of the richneſs

1774. May. neſs and fertility of Otaheite (not forty leagues in circuit) than its ſupporting ſuch a number of inhabitants.

This iſland made formerly but one kingdom; how long it has been divided into two, I cannot pretend to ſay; but I believe not long. The kings of Tiarabou are a branch of the family of thoſe of Opoureonu; at preſent, the two are nearly related; and, I think, the former is, in ſome meaſure, dependent on the latter. Otoo is ſtiled *Earee de hie* of the whole iſland; and we have been told that Waheatoua the king of Tiarabou muſt uncover before him, in the ſame manner as the meaneſt of his ſubjects. This homage is due to Otoo as *Earee de hie* of the iſle, to Tarevatou, his brother, and his ſecond ſiſter; to the one as heir, and to the other as heir apparent; his eldeſt ſiſter being married, is not intitled to this homage.

The *Eowas* and *Whannos* we have ſometimes ſeen covered before the king, but whether by courteſy, or by virtue of their office, we never could learn. Theſe men who are the principal perſons about the king, and form his court, are generally, if not always, his relations. Tee, whom I have ſo often mentioned, was one of them. We have been told, that the *Eowas*, who have the firſt rank, attend in their turns, a certain number each day, which occaſioned us to call them lords in waiting; but whether this was really ſo I cannot ſay. We ſeldom found Tee abſent; indeed his attendance was neceſſary, as being beſt able to negociate matters between us and them, on which ſervice he was always employed; and he executed it, I have reaſon to believe, to the ſatisfaction of both parties.

1774. May.

It is to be regretted, that we know little more of this government than the general out-line; for, of its ſubdiviſions, claſſes, or orders of the conſtituent parts, how diſpoſed, or in what manner connected, ſo as to form one body politic, we know but little. We, however, are ſure that it is of the feudal kind; and, if we may judge from what we have ſeen, it has ſufficient ſtability, and is by no means badly conſtructed.

The *Eowas* and *Whannos* always eat with the king; indeed I do not know if any one is excluded from this privilege but the *Toutous*. For, as to the women they are out of the queſtion, as they never eat with the men, let their rank be ever ſo much elevated.

Notwithſtanding this kind of kingly eſtabliſhment, there was very little about Otoo's perſon or court, by which a ſtranger could diſtinguiſh the king from the ſubject. I ſeldom ſaw him dreſſed in any thing but a common piece of cloth wrapped round his loins; ſo that he ſeemed to avoid all unneceſſary pomp, and even to demean himſelf more than any other of the *Earees*. I have ſeen him work at a paddle, in coming to and going from the ſhip, in common with the other paddlers; and even when ſome of his *Toutous* ſat looking on. All have free acceſs to him, and ſpeak to him whereever they ſee him, without the leaſt ceremony: ſuch is the eaſy freedom which every individual of this happy iſle enjoys. I have obſerved that the chiefs of theſe iſles are more beloved by the bulk of the people, than feared. May we not from hence conclude, that the government is mild and equitable?

We have mentioned that Waheatoua of Tiarabou is related to Otoo. The ſame may be ſaid of the chiefs of Eimeo, Tapa-

1774. May. Tapamannoo, Huaheine, Ulietea, Otaha, and Bolabola; for they are all related to the royal family of Otaheite. It is a maxim with the *Earees* and others of ſuperior rank, never to intermarry with the *Toutous* or others of inferior rank. Probably this cuſtom is one great inducement to the eſtabliſhing of the ſocieties called *Eareeoies*. It is certain that theſe ſocieties greatly prevent the increaſe of the ſuperior claſſes of people, of which they are compoſed, and do not at all interfere with the inferiors or *Toutous*; for I never heard of one of theſe being an *Earreoy*. Nor did I ever hear that a *Toutou* could riſe in life above the rank in which he was born.

I have occaſionally mentioned the extraordinary fondneſs the people of Otaheite ſhewed for red feathers. Theſe they call *Oora*, and they are as valuable here as jewels are in Europe, eſpecially thoſe which they call *Ooravine*, and grow on the head of the green paroquet; all red feathers are, indeed, eſteemed, but none equally with theſe; and they are ſuch good judges as to know very well how to diſtinguiſh one ſort from another. Many of our people attempted to deceive them by dying other feathers; but I never heard that any one ſucceeded. Theſe feathers they make up in little bunches, conſiſting of eight or ten, and fix them to the end of a ſmall cord about three or four inches long, which is made of the ſtrong outſide fibres of the cocoa-nut, twiſted ſo hard that it is like a wire, and ſerves as a handle to the bunch. Thus prepared they are uſed as ſymbols of the *Eatuas*, or divinities, in all their religious ceremonies. I have often ſeen them hold one of theſe bunches, and ſometimes only two or three feathers, between the fore-finger and thumb, and ſay a prayer, not one word of which I could ever underſtand. Whoever comes to this iſland will do well to provide

vide himſelf with red feathers, the fineſt and ſmalleſt that are to be got. He muſt alſo have a good ſtock of axes, and hatchets, ſpike-nails, files, knives, looking-glaſſes, beads, &c. Sheets and ſhirts are much ſought after, eſpecially by the ladies; as many of our gentlemen found by experience. 1774. May.

The two goats, which Captain Furneaux gave to Otoo when we were laſt here, ſeemed to promiſe fair for anſwering the end for which they were put on ſhore. The ewe ſoon after had two female kids, which were now ſo far grown as to be nearly ready to propagate; and the old ewe was again with kid. The people ſeemed to be very fond of them, and they to like their ſituation as well; for they were in excellent condition. From this circumſtance we may hope that, in a few years, they will have ſome to ſpare to their neighbours; and, by that means, they may in time ſpread over all the iſles in this ocean. The ſheep which we left, died ſoon after, excepting one, which we underſtood was yet alive. We have alſo furniſhed them with a ſtock of cats; no leſs than twenty having been given away at this iſle, beſides what were left at Ulietea and Huaheine.

CHAP. XIV.

The Arrival of the Ship at the Iſland of Huaheine; with an Account of an Expedition into the Iſland, and ſeveral other Incidents which happened while ſhe lay there.

1774. May. Sunday 15. AT one o'clock in the afternoon on the 15th, we anchored in the North entrance of O'Wharre Harbour in the iſland of Huaheine; hoiſted out the boats, warped into a proper birth, and moored with the bower and kedge anchor, not quite a cable's length from the ſhore. While this was doing, ſeveral of the natives made us a viſit, amongſt whom was old Oree the chief, who brought a hog, and ſome other articles, which he preſented to me, with the uſual ceremony.

Monday 16. Next morning, the natives began to bring us fruit. I returned Oree's viſit, and made my preſent to him; one article of which was red feathers. Two or three of theſe the chief took in his right hand, holding them up between the finger and thumb, and ſaid a prayer, as I underſtood, which was little noticed by any preſent. Two hogs were, ſoon after, put into my boat; and he, and ſeveral of his friends, came on board and dined with us. After dinner Oree gave me to underſtand what articles would be moſt acceptable to him and his friends; which were chiefly axes and nails. Accordingly I gave him what he aſked, and deſired he would diſtribute them to the others, which he did, ſeemingly to the ſatisfaction of every one. A youth about ten or twelve years of

age, either his ſon or grandſon, ſeemed to be the perſon of moſt note, and had the greateſt ſhare. 1774. May. Monday 16.

After the diſtribution was over, they all returned aſhore. Mr. Forſter and his party being out in the country botanizing, his ſervant, a feeble man, was beſet by five or ſix fellows, who would have ſtripped him, if, that moment, one of the party had not come to his aſſiſtance; after which they made off with a hatchet they had got from him.

On the 17th I went aſhore to look for the chief, in order to complain of the outrage committed as above; but he was not in the neighbourhood. Being aſhore in the afternoon, a perſon came and told me Oree wanted to ſee me. I went with the man, and was conducted to a large houſe where the chief, and ſeveral other perſons of note, were aſſembled in council, as well as I could underſtand. After I was ſeated, and ſome converſation had paſſed among them, Oree made a ſpeech, and was anſwered by another. I underſtood no more of either, than juſt to know it regarded the robbery committed the day before. The chief then began to aſſure me, that neither he, nor any one preſent (which were the principal chiefs in the neighbourhood) had any hand in it; and deſired me to kill, with the guns, all thoſe which had. I aſſured him that I was ſatisfied that neither he, nor thoſe preſent, were at all concerned in the affair; and that I ſhould do with the fellows as he deſired, or any others who were guilty of the like crimes. Having aſked where the fellows were, and deſired they would bring them to me that I might do with them as he had ſaid; his anſwer was, they were gone to the mountains, and he could not get them. Whether this was the caſe or not I will not pretend to ſay. I knew fair means would never make them deliver them up; and I Tueſday 17.

1774. Tueſday 17. had no intention to try others. So the affair dropt, and the council broke up.

In the evening, ſome of the gentlemen went to a dramatic entertainment. The piece repreſented a girl as running away with us from Otaheite; which was in ſome degree true; as a young woman had taken a paſſage with us down to Ulietea, and happened now to be preſent at the repreſentation of her own adventures; which had ſuch an effect upon her, that it was with great difficulty our gentlemen could prevail upon her to ſee the play out, or to refrain from tears while it was acting. The piece concluded with the reception ſhe was ſuppoſed to meet with from her friends at her return; which was not a very favourable one. Theſe people can add little extempore pieces to their entertainments when they ſee occaſion. Is it not then reaſonable to ſuppoſe that it was intended as a ſatire againſt this girl, and to diſcourage others from following her ſteps?

Wedneſ. 18. In the morning of the 18th, Oree came on board with a preſent of fruit, ſtayed dinner, and in the afternoon deſired to ſee ſome great guns fired, ſhotted, which I complied with. The reaſon of his making this requeſt was his hearing, from Oedidee and our Otaheitean paſſengers, that we had ſo done at their iſland. The chief would have had us fire at the hills; but I did not approve of that, leſt the ſhot ſhould fall ſhort, and do ſome miſchief. Beſides, the effect was better ſeen in the water. Some of the petty officers, who had leave to go into the country for their amuſement, took two of the natives with them to be their guides, and to carry their bags, containing nails, hatchets, &c. the current caſh we traded with here; which the fellows made off with in the following artful manner. The gentlemen had with them two

muſquets for ſhooting birds. After a ſhower of rain, their guides pointed out ſome for them to ſhoot. One of the muſquets having miſſed fire ſeveral times, and the other having gone off, the inſtant the fellows ſaw themſelves ſecure from both, they ran away, leaving the gentlemen gazing after them with ſo much ſurpriſe, that no one had preſence of mind to purſue them. 1774. May. Wedneſ. 18.

The 19th, ſhowery morning; fair afternoon; nothing happened worthy note. Thurſday 19.

Early in the morning of the 20th, three of the officers ſet out on a ſhooting party, rather contrary to my inclination; as I found the natives, at leaſt ſome of them, were continually watching every opportunity to rob ſtraggling parties, and were daily growing more daring. About three o'clock in the afternoon, I got intelligence that they were ſeized and ſtripped of every thing they had about them. Upon this I immediately went on ſhore with a boat's crew, accompanied by Mr. Forſter, and took poſſeſſion of a large houſe with all its effects, and two chiefs whom I found in it; but this we did in ſuch a manner that they hardly knew what we were about, being unwilling to alarm the neighbourhood. In this ſituation I remained till I heard the officers had got back ſafe, and had all their things reſtored to them: then I quitted the houſe; and preſently after every thing in it was carried off. When I got on board I was informed of the whole affair by the officers themſelves. Some little inſult on their part, induced the natives to ſeize their guns, on which a ſcuffle enſued, ſome chiefs interfered, took the officers out of the crowd, and cauſed every thing which had been taken from them to be reſtored. This was at a place where we had before been told, that a ſet of fellows had formed themſelves Friday 20.

into

1774. May. Friday 20. into a gang, with a reſolution to rob every one who ſhould go that way. It ſhould ſeem, from what followed, that the chief could not prevent this, or put a ſtop to theſe repeated outrages. I did not ſee him this evening, as he was not come into the neighbourhood when I went on board; but I learnt from Oedidee that he came ſoon after, and was ſo concerned at what had happened that he wept.

Saturday 21. Day-light no ſooner broke upon us on the 21ſt, than we ſaw upwards of ſixty canoes under ſail going out of the harbour, and ſteering over for Ulietea. On our enquiring the reaſon, we were told that the people in them were *Eareeoies*, and were going to viſit their brethren in the neighbouring iſles. One may almoſt compare theſe men to Free-Maſons; they tell us they aſſiſt each other when need requires; they ſeem to have cuſtoms among them which they either will not, or cannot explain. Oedidee told us he was one; Tupia was one; and yet I have not been able to get any tolerable idea of this ſet of men, from either of them. Oedidee denies that the children they have by their miſtreſſes are put to death, as we underſtood from Tupia and others. I have had ſome converſation with Omai on this ſubject, and find that he confirms every thing that is ſaid upon it in the narrative of my former voyage.

Oedidee, who generally ſlept on ſhore, came off with a meſſage from Oree, deſiring I would land with twenty-two men, to go with him to chaſtiſe the robbers. The meſſenger brought with him, by way of aſſiſting his memory, twenty-two pieces of leaves, a method cuſtomary amongſt them. On my receiving this extraordinary meſſage, I went to the chief for better information; and all I could learn of him was, that theſe fellows were a ſort of banditti, who had formed

formed themſelves into a body with a reſolution of ſeizing and robbing our people wherever they found them, and were now armed for that purpoſe: for which reaſon he wanted me to go along with him to chaſtiſe them. I told him, if I went, they would fly to the mountains; but he ſaid, they were reſolved to fight us, and therefore deſired I would deſtroy both them and their houſe; but begged I would ſpare thoſe in the neighbourhood, as alſo the canoes and the *Whenooa*. By way of ſecuring theſe, he preſented me with a pig as a peace-offering for the *Whenooa*. It was too ſmall to be meant for any thing but a ceremony of this kind. This ſenſible old chief could ſee (what perhaps none of the others ever thought of) that every thing in the neighbourhood was at our mercy, and therefore took care to ſecure them by this method, which I ſuppoſe to be of weight with them. When I returned on board, I conſidered of the chief's requeſt, which upon the whole appeared an extraordinary one. I, however, reſolved to go, leſt theſe fellows ſhould be (by our refuſal) encouraged to commit greater acts of violence; and, as their proceeding would ſoon reach Ulietea, where I intended to go next, the people there might be induced to treat us in the ſame manner, or worſe, they being more numerous. Accordingly, I landed with forty-eight men, including officers, Mr. Forſter, and ſome others of the gentlemen. The chief joined us with a few people, and we began to march, in ſearch of the banditti, in good order. As we proceeded, the chief's party increaſed like a ſnow-ball. Oedidee, who was with us, began to be alarmed, obſerving that many of the people in our company were of the very party we were going againſt, and at laſt telling us that they were only leading us to ſome place where they could attack us to advantage. Whether there was any truth in this, or it

1774. May. Saturday 21.

was

1774. May. Saturday 21.

was only Oedidee's fears, I will not pretend to ſay. He, however, was the only perſon we could confide in, and we regulated our motions according to the information he had given us. After marching ſome miles we got intelligence that the men we were going after had fled to the mountains; but I think this was not till I had declared to the chief I would proceed no farther. For we were then about croſſing a deep valley bounded on each ſide by ſteep rocks, where a few men with ſtones only might have made our retreat difficult, if their intentions were what Oedidee had ſuggeſted, and which he ſtill perſiſted in. Having come to a reſolution to return, we marched back in the ſame order as we went, and ſaw, in ſeveral places, people, who had been following us, coming down from the ſides of the hills with their arms in their hands, which they inſtantly quitted, and hid in the buſhes, when they ſaw they were diſcovered by us. This ſeemed to prove that there muſt have been ſome foundation for what Oedidee had ſaid; but I cannot believe the chief had any ſuch deſign, whatever the people might have. In our return we halted at a convenient place to refreſh ourſelves. I ordered the people to bring us ſome cocoa-nuts, which they did immediately. Indeed, by this time, I believe many of them wiſhed us on board out of the way; for although no one ſtep was taken that could give them the leaſt alarm, they certainly were in terror. Two chiefs brought each of them a pig, a dog, and ſome young plantain trees, the uſual peace-offerings, and with due ceremony preſented them ſingly to me. Another brought a very large hog, with which he followed us to the ſhip. After this we continued our courſe to the landing-place, where I cauſed ſeveral vollies to be fired, to convince the natives that we could ſupport a continual fire. This being done, we

all

all embarked and went on board; and ſoon after the chief following, brought with him a quantity of fruit, and ſat down with us to dinner. We had ſcarce dined before more fruit was brought us by others, and two hogs; ſo that we were likely to make more by this little excurſion than by all the preſents we had made them. It certainly gave them ſome alarm to ſee ſo ſtrong a party of men march into their country; and probably gave them a better opinion of fire-arms than they had before. For I believe they had but an indifferent, or rather contemptible idea of muſquets in general, having never ſeen any fired but at birds, &c. by ſuch of our people as uſed to ſtraggle about the country, the moſt of them but indifferent markſmen, loſing generally two ſhots out of three, their pieces often miſſing fire, and being ſlow in charging. Of all this they had taken great notice, and concluded, as well they might, that fire-arms were not ſo terrible things as they had been taught to believe. 1774. May.

When the chiefs took leave in the evening, they promiſed to bring us next day a very large ſupply of proviſions. In the article of fruit they were as good as their word, but of hogs, which we moſt wanted, they brought far leſs than we expected. Going aſhore in the afternoon, I found the chief juſt ſitting down to dinner. I cannot ſay what was the occaſion of his dining ſo late. As ſoon as he was ſeated, ſeveral people began chewing the pepper-root; about a pint of the juice of which, without any mixture, was the firſt diſh, and was diſpatched in a moment. A cup of it was preſented to me; but the manner of brewing it was at this time ſufficient. Oedidee was not ſo nice, but took what I refuſed. After this the chief waſhed his mouth with cocoa-nut-water; then he eat of repe, plantain, and mahee, of each not a little; Sunday 22.

1774. May. Sunday 22. little; and laſtly finiſhed his repaſt by eating, or rather drinking, about three pints of *popoie*; which is made of bread-fruit, plantains, mahee, &c. beat together and diluted with water till it is of the conſiſtence of a cuſtard. This was at the outſide of his houſe in the open air; for, at this time, a play was acting within, as was done almoſt every day in the neighbourhood; but they were ſuch poor performances that I never attended. I obſerved that, after the juice had been ſqueezed out of the chewed pepper-root for the chief, the fibres were carefully picked up and taken away by one of his ſervants. On my aſking what he intended to do with it, I was told he would put water to it, and ſtrain it again. Thus he would make what I will call ſmall beer.

Monday 23. The 23d, wind eaſterly, as it had been ever ſince we left Otaheite. Early in the morning, we unmoored, and at eight weighed and put to ſea. The good old chief was the laſt man who went out of the ſhip. At parting I told him we ſhould ſee each other no more; at which he wept, and ſaid, "Let your ſons come, we will treat them well." Oree is a good man, in the utmoſt ſenſe of the word; but many of the people are far from being of that diſpoſition, and ſeem to take advantage of his old age; Teraderre his grandſon and heir being yet but a youth. The gentle treatment the people of this iſle ever met with from me, and the careleſs and imprudent manner in which many of our people had rambled about in the country, from a vain opinion that fire-arms rendered them invincible, encouraged many at Huaheine, to commit acts of violence, which no man at Otaheite ever durſt attempt.

During our ſtay here we got bread-fruit, cocoa-nuts, &c. more than we could well conſume, but not hogs enough, by

far, to ſupply our daily expence; and yet it did not appear that they were ſcarce in the iſle. It muſt, however, be allowed, that the number we took away, when laſt here, muſt have thinned them greatly, and, at the ſame time, ſtocked the iſle with our articles. Beſides, we now wanted a proper aſſortment of trade; what we had being nearly exhauſted, and the few remaining red feathers being here but of little value, when compared to the eſtimation they ſtand in at Otaheite. This obliged me to ſet the ſmiths to work to make different ſorts of iron tools, nails, &c. in order to enable me to procure refreſhments at the other iſles, and to ſupport my credit and influence among the natives.

1774. May. Monday 23.

CHAP. XV.

Arrival at Ulietea, with an Account of the Reception we met with there, and the ſeveral Incidents which happened during our Stay. A Report of two Ships being at Huaheine. Preparations to leave the Iſland, and the Regret the Inhabitants ſhewed on the Occaſion. The Character of Oedidee, with ſome general Obſervations on the Iſlands.

1774. May. AS ſoon as we were clear of the harbour, we made ſail, and ſtood over for the South end of Ulietea. Oree took
Monday 23. the opportunity to ſend a man with a meſſage to Opoony. Being little wind all the latter part of the day, it was dark before we reached the Weſt ſide of the iſle, where we ſpent the night. The ſame light variable wind continued till ten
Tueſday 24. o'clock next morning, when the Trade-wind at Eaſt prevailed, and we ventured to ply up to the harbour, firſt ſending a boat to lie in anchorage in the entrance. After making a few trips, we got before the channel, and with all our ſails ſet, and the head-way the ſhip had acquired, ſhut her in as far as ſhe would go; then dropped the anchor, and took in the ſails. This is the method of getting into moſt of the harbours which are on the lee-ſide of theſe iſles; for the channels, in general, are too narrow to ply in. We were now anchored between the two points of the reef which form the entrance; each not more than two-thirds the length of a cable from us, and on which the ſea broke with ſuch

ſuch height and violence as, to people leſs acquainted with the place, would have been terrible. Having all our boats out with anchors and warps in them, which were preſently run out, the ſhip warped into ſafety, where we dropped anchor for the night. While this work was going forward, my old friend Oreo the chief, and ſeveral more, came to ſee us. The chief came not empty. 1774. May. Tueſday 24.

Next day we warped the ſhip into, and moored her in, a proper birth, ſo as to command all the ſhores around us. In the mean time a party of us went aſhore to pay the chief a viſit, and to make the cuſtomary preſent. At our firſt entering his houſe, we were met by four or five old women, weeping and lamenting, as it were, moſt bitterly, and at the ſame time cutting their heads, with inſtruments made of ſhark's teeth, till the blood ran plentifully down their faces and on their ſhoulders. What was ſtill worſe, we were obliged to ſubmit to the embraces of theſe old hags, and by that means were all beſmeared with blood. This ceremony (for it was merely ſuch) being over, they went out, waſhed themſelves, and immediately after appeared as chearful as any of the company. Having made ſome little ſtay, and given my preſent to the chief and his friends, he put a hog and ſome fruit into my boat, and came on board with us to dinner. In the afternoon, we had a vaſt number of people and canoes about us, from different parts of the iſland. They all took up their quarters in our neighbourhood, where they remained feaſting for ſome days. We underſtood the moſt of them were *Eareoys*. Wedneſ. 25.

The 26th afforded nothing remarkable, excepting that Mr. Forſter, in his botanical excurſions, ſaw a burying-place for dogs, which they called *Marai no te Oore*. But, I think, Thurſday 26.

we

1774. May. Thurſday 26. we ought not to look upon this as one of their cuſtoms; becauſe few dogs die a natural death, being generally, if not always, killed and eaten, or elſe given as an offering to the gods. Probably this might be a *Marai* or altar, where this ſort of offering was made; or it might have been the whim of ſome perſon to have buried his favourite dog in this manner. But be it as it will, I cannot think it is a general cuſtom in the nation; and, for my own part, I neither ſaw nor heard of any ſuch thing before.

Friday 27. Early in the morning of the 27th, Oreo, his wife, ſon, daughter, and ſeveral more of his friends, made us a viſit, and brought with them a good quantity of all manner of refreſhments; little having as yet been got from any body elſe. They ſtaid dinner; after which a party of us accompanied them on ſhore, where we were entertained with a play, called *Mididij Harramy*, which ſignifies the *Child is coming*. It concluded with the repreſentation of a woman in labour, acted by a ſet of great brawny fellows, one of whom at laſt brought forth a ſtrapping boy, about ſix feet high, who ran about the ſtage, dragging after him a large wiſp of ſtraw which hung by a ſtring from his middle. I had an opportunity of ſeeing this acted another time, when I obſerved, that the moment they had got hold of the fellow who repreſented the child, they flattened or preſſed his noſe. From this I judged, that they do ſo by their children when born, which may be the reaſon why all in general have flat noſes. This part of the play, from its newneſs, and the ludicrous manner in which it was performed, gave us, the firſt time we ſaw it, ſome entertainment, and cauſed a loud laugh, which might be the reaſon why they acted it ſo often afterwards. But this, like all their other pieces, could entertain

tertain us no more than once; eſpecially as we could gather little from them, for want of knowing more of their language. 1774. May.

The 28th was ſpent by me in much the ſame manner as the preceding day, viz. in entertaining my friends, and being entertained by them. Mr. Forſter and his party in the country botanizing. Saturday 28.

Next morning, we found ſeveral articles had been ſtolen out of our boats lying at the buoy, about ſixty or ſeventy yards from the ſhip. As ſoon as I was informed of it, I went to the chief to acquaint him therewith. I found that he not only knew they were ſtolen, but by whom, and where they were; and he went immediately with me in my boat in purſuit of them. After proceeding a good way alongſhore, towards the ſouth end of the iſland, the chief ordered us to land near ſome houſes, where we did not wait long before all the articles were brought to us, except the pinnace's iron tiller, which I was told was ſtill farther off. But when I wanted to go after it, I found the chief unwilling to proceed; and he actually gave me the ſlip, and retired into the country. Without him I knew I could do nothing. The people began to be alarmed when they ſaw I was for going farther; by which I concluded that the tiller was out of their reach alſo. I, therefore, ſent one of them to the chief to deſire him to return. He returned accordingly; when we ſat down, and had ſome victuals ſet before us; thinking perhaps that, as I had not breakfaſted, I muſt be hungry, and not in a good humour. Thus I was amuſed till two hogs were produced, which they intreated me to accept. This I did, and then their fears vaniſhed; and I thought myſelf not ill off in having gotten two good hogs for a thing Sunday 29.

which

1774. May. Sunday 29. which ſeemed to be quite out of my reach. Matters being thus ſettled, we returned on board, and had the company of the chief and his ſon to dinner. After that we all went aſhore, where a play was acted for the entertainment of ſuch as would ſpend their time in looking at it. Beſides theſe plays, which the chief cauſed frequently to be acted, there were a ſet of ſtrolling players in the neighbourhood who performed every day. But their pieces ſeemed to be ſo much alike, that we ſoon grew tired of them; eſpecially as we could not collect any intereſting circumſtances from them. We, our ſhip, and our country, were frequently brought on the ſtage; but on what account I know not. It can hardly be doubted, that this was deſigned as a compliment to us, and probably not acted but when ſome of us were preſent. I generally appeared at Oreo's theatre towards the cloſe of the play, and twice at the other, in order to give my mite to the actors. The only actreſs at Oreo's theatre was his daughter, a pretty brown girl, at whoſe ſhrine, on theſe occaſions, many offerings were made by her numerous votaries. This, I believe, was one great inducement to her father's giving us theſe entertainments ſo often.

Monday 30. Early in the morning of the 30th, I ſet out with the two boats, accompanied by the two Mr. Forſters, Oedidee, the chief, his wife, ſon, and daughter, for an eſtate which Oedidee called his, ſituated at the north end of the iſland. There I was promiſed to have hogs and fruit in abundance; but when we came there we found that poor Oedidee could not command one ſingle thing, whatever right he might have to the *Whenooa*, which was now in poſſeſſion of his brother, who, ſoon after we landed, preſented to me, with the uſual cere-

mony,

mony, two pigs. I made him a very handſome preſent in return, and Oedidee gave him every thing he had left of what he had collected the time he was with us. 1774. May. Monday 30.

After this ceremony was over, I ordered one of the pigs to be killed and dreſſed for dinner, and attended myſelf to the whole operation, which was as follows: They firſt ſtrangled the hog, which was done by three men; the hog being placed on his back, two of them laid a pretty ſtrong ſtick acroſs his throat, and preſſed with all their weight on each end; the third man held his hind legs, kept him on his back, and plugged up his fundament with graſs, I ſuppoſe to prevent any air from paſſing or repaſſing that way. In this manner they held him for about ten minutes before he was quite dead. In the mean time, ſome hands were employed in making a fire, to heat the oven, which was cloſe by. As ſoon as the hog was quite dead, they laid him on the fire, and burnt or ſinged the hair, ſo that it came off with almoſt the ſame eaſe as if it had been ſcalded. As the hair was got off one part, another was applied to the fire till they had got off the whole, yet not ſo clean but that another operation was neceſſary; which was to carry it to the ſea-ſide, and there give it a good ſcrubbing with ſandy ſtones, and ſand. This brought off all the ſcurf, &c. which the fire had left on. After well waſhing off the ſand and dirt, the carcaſe was brought again to the former place, and laid on clean green leaves, in order to be opened. They firſt ripped up the ſkin of the belly, and took out the fat or lard from between the ſkin and the fleſh, which they laid on a large green leaf. The belly was then ripped open, and the entrails taken out, and carried away in a baſket, ſo that I know not what became of them; but am certain they were not thrown away. The blood was next taken out and

1774. May. Monday 30.

put into a large leaf, and then the lard, which was put to the other fat. The hog was now waſhed clean, both inſide and out, with freſh water, and ſeveral hot ſtones put into his belly, which were ſhaken in under the breaſt, and green leaves crammed in upon them. By this time the oven was ſufficiently heated; what fire remained was taken away, together with ſome of the hot ſtones; the reſt made a kind of pavement in the bottom of the hole or oven, and were covered with leaves on which the hog was placed on his belly. The lard and fat, after being waſhed with water, were put into a veſſel, made juſt then of the green bark of a plantain tree, together with two or three hot ſtones, and placed on one ſide the hog. A hot ſtone was put to the blood, which was tied up in the leaf, and put into the oven; as alſo bread-fruit and plantains. Then the whole was covered with green leaves, on which were laid the remainder of the hot ſtones; over them were leaves; then any ſort of rubbiſh they could lay their hands on; finiſhing the operation by well covering the whole with earth. While the victuals were baking, a table was ſpread with green leaves on the floor, at one end of a large boat-houſe. At the cloſe of two hours and ten minutes, the oven was opened, and all the victuals taken out. Thoſe of the natives who dined with us, ſat down by themſelves, at one end of the table, and we at the other. The hog was placed before us, and the fat and blood before them, on which they chiefly dined, and ſaid it was *Mamity*, very good victuals; and we not only ſaid, but thought the ſame of the pork. The hog weighed about fifty pounds. Some parts about the ribs I thought rather overdone; but the more fleſhy parts were excellent; and the ſkin, which by our way of dreſſing can hardly be eaten, had, by this method, a taſte and flavour ſuperior to any thing I ever

met

met with of the kind. I have now only to add, that during the whole of the various operations, they exhibited a cleanlineſs well worthy of imitation. I have been the more particular in this account, becauſe I do not remember that any one of us had ſeen the whole proceſs before; nor is it well deſcribed in the narrative of my former voyage.

1774. May. Monday 30.

While dinner was preparing, I took a view of this *Whenooa* of Oedidee. It was ſmall, but a pleaſant ſpot; and the houſes were ſo diſpoſed as to form a very pretty village, which is very rarely the caſe at theſe iſles. Soon after we had dined, we ſet out for the ſhip, with the other pig, and a few races of plantains, which proved to be the ſum total of our great expectations.

In our return to the ſhip, we put aſhore at a place where, in the corner of a houſe, we ſaw four wooden images, each two feet long, ſtanding on a ſhelf, having a piece of cloth round their middle, and a kind of turban on their heads, in which were ſtuck long cocks feathers. A perſon in the houſe told us they were, *Eatua no te Toutou*, gods of the ſervants or ſlaves. I doubt if this be ſufficient to conclude that they pay them divine worſhip, and that the ſervants or ſlaves are not allowed the ſame gods as men of more elevated rank. I never heard that Tupia made any ſuch diſtinction, or that they worſhipped any viſible thing whatever. Beſides, theſe were the firſt wooden gods we had ſeen in any of the iſles; and all the authority we had for their being ſuch, was the bare word of perhaps a ſuperſtitious perſon, and whom we were likewiſe liable to miſunderſtand. It muſt be allowed that the people of this iſle are in general more ſuperſtitious than at Otaheite. At the firſt viſit I made the chief after our arrival, he deſired I would not ſuffer any of my people to

1774. May. Monday 30

ſhoot herons and wood-peckers; birds as ſacred with them as robin-red-breaſts, ſwallows, &c. are with many old women in England. Tupia, who was a prieſt, and well acquainted with their religion, cuſtoms, traditions, &c. paid little or no regard to theſe birds. I mention this, becauſe ſome amongſt us were of opinion that theſe birds are their *Eatuas*, or gods. We, indeed, fell into this opinion when I was here in 1769, and into ſome others ſtill more abſurd, which we had undoubtedly adopted if Tupia had not undeceived us. A man of his knowledge and underſtanding we have not ſince met with, and conſequently have added nothing to his account of their religion, but ſuperſtitious notions.

Tueſday 31.

The people knowing that we ſhould ſail ſoon, began on the 31ſt to bring on board fruit more than uſual. Amongſt thoſe who came was a young man who meaſured ſix feet four inches and ſix-tenths; and his ſiſter, younger than him, meaſured five feet ten inches and an half. A briſk trade for hogs and fruit continued on the 1ſt of June. On the 2d, in the afternoon, we got intelligence that, three days before, two ſhips had arrived at Huaheine. The ſame report ſaid the one was commanded by Mr. Banks, and the other by Captain Furneaux. The man, who brought the account, ſaid he was made drunk on board one of them, and deſcribed the perſons of Mr. Banks and Captain Furneaux ſo well, that I had not the leaſt doubt of the truth, and began to conſider about ſending a boat over, that very evening, with orders to Captain Furneaux, when a man, a friend of Mr. Forſter, happened to come on board, and denied the whole, ſaying it was *wà warre*, a lie. The man from whom we had the intelligence was now gone, ſo that I could not confront them, and there were none elſe preſent

June. Wedneſ. 1. Thurſday 2.

who knew any thing about it but by report; ſo that I laid aſide ſending over a boat till I ſhould be better informed. This evening we entertained the people with fire-works, on one of the little iſles near the entrance of the harbour. 1774. June. Thurſday 2.

I had fixed on the next day for ſailing, but the intelligence from Huaheine put a ſtop to it. The chief had promiſed to bring the man on board who firſt brought the account; but he was either not to be found, or would not appear. In the morning, the people were divided in their opinions; but in the afternoon, all ſaid it was a falſe report. I had ſent Mr. Clerke, in the morning, to the fartheſt part of the iſland, to make inquiries there; he returned without learning any thing ſatisfactory. In ſhort, the report appeared now too ill founded, to authoriſe me to ſend a boat over, or to wait any longer here; and, therefore, early in the morning of the 4th, I got every thing in readineſs to ſail. Oreo the chief, and his whole family, came on board, to take their laſt farewel, accompanied by Oo-oo-rou, the *Earee de hi*, and Boba the *Earee* of Otaha, and ſeveral of their friends. None of them came empty; but Oo-oo-rou brought a pretty large preſent, this being his firſt and only viſit. I diſtributed amongſt them almoſt every thing I had left. The very hoſpitable manner in which I had ever been received by theſe people, had endeared them to me, and given them a juſt title to every thing in my power to grant. I queſtioned them again about the ſhips at Huaheine; and they all, to a man, denied that any were there. During the time theſe people remained on board, they were continually importuning me to return. The chief, his wife and daughter, but eſpecially the two latter, ſcarcely ever ceaſed weeping. I will not pretend to ſay whether it was real or feigned grief they ſhewed on this

Friday 3.

Saturday 4.

1774. June. Saturday 4.

this occaſion. Perhaps there was a mixture of both; but were I to abide by my own opinion only, I ſhould believe it was real. At laſt, when we were about to weigh, they took a moſt affectionate leave. Oreo's laſt requeſt was for me to return; when he ſaw he could not obtain that promiſe, he aſked the name of my *Marai* (burying-place). As ſtrange a queſtion as this was, I heſitated not a moment to tell him Stepney; the pariſh in which I live when in London. I was made to repeat it ſeveral times over till they could pronounce it: then, Stepney *Marai no Toote* was echoed through an hundred mouths at once. I afterwards found the ſame queſtion had been put to Mr. Forſter by a man on ſhore; but he gave a different, and indeed more proper anſwer, by ſaying no man, who uſed the ſea, could ſay where he ſhould be buried. It is the cuſtom at theſe iſles for all the great families to have burial-places of their own, where their remains are interred. Theſe go with the eſtate to the next heir. The *Marai* at Oparree in Otaheite, when Tootaha ſwayed the ſcepter, was called *Marai no Tootaha*; but now it is called *Marai no Otoo*. What greater proof could we have of theſe people eſteeming us as friends, than their wiſhing to remember us, even beyond the period of our lives? They had been repeatedly told that we ſhould ſee them no more; they then wanted to know where we were to mingle with our parent duſt.

As I could not promiſe, or even ſuppoſe, that more Engliſh ſhips would be ſent to thoſe iſles, our faithful companion Oedidee choſe to remain in his native country. But he left us with a regret fully demonſtrative of the eſteem he bore to us; nor could any thing, but the fear of never returning, have torn him from us. When the chief teaſed me ſo much about returning, I ſometimes gave ſuch anſwers as

left

left them hopes. Oedidee would inſtantly catch at this, take me on one ſide, and aſk me over again. In ſhort, I have not words to deſcribe the anguiſh which appeared in this young man's breaſt, when he went away. He looked up at the ſhip, burſt into tears, and then ſunk down into the canoe. The maxim that a prophet has no honour in his own country, was never more fully verified than in this youth. At Otaheite he might have had any thing that was in their power to beſtow; whereas here he was not in the leaſt noticed. He was a youth of good parts, and like moſt of his countrymen, of a docile, gentle, and humane diſpoſition; but, in a manner, wholly ignorant of their religion, government, manners, cuſtoms, and traditions; conſequently, no material knowledge could have been gathered from him, had I brought him away. Indeed, he would have been a better ſpecimen of the nation, in every reſpect, than Omai. Juſt as Oedidee was going out of the ſhip, he aſked me to *Tatou* ſome *Parou* for him, in order to ſhew the commanders of any other ſhips which might ſtop here. I complied with his requeſt, gave him a certificate of the time he had been with us, and recommended him to the notice of thoſe who might touch at the iſland after me.

1774. June. Saturday 4.

We did not get clear of our friends till eleven o'clock, when we weighed, and put to ſea; but Oedidee did not leave us till we were almoſt out of the harbour. He ſtayed, in order to fire ſome guns; for it being his Majeſty's birth-day, we fired the ſalute at going away.

When I firſt came to theſe iſlands, I had ſome thought of viſiting Tupia's famous Bolabola. But as I had now got on board a plentiful ſupply of all manner of refreſhments, and the route I had in view allowing me no time to

1774. June. Saturday 4. ſpare, I laid this deſign aſide, and directed my courſe to the Weſt; taking our final leave of theſe happy iſles, on which benevolent Nature has ſpread her luxuriant ſweets with a laviſh hand. The natives, copying the bounty of Nature, are equally liberal; contributing plentifully and cheerfully to the wants of navigators. During the ſix weeks we had remained at them we had freſh pork, and all the fruits which were in ſeaſon in the utmoſt profuſion; beſides fiſh at Otaheite, and fowls at the other iſles. All theſe articles we got in exchange for axes, hatchets, nails, chiſſels, cloth, red feathers, beads, knives, ſciſſars, looking-glaſſes, &c. articles which will ever be valuable here. I ought not to omit ſhirts as a very capital article in making preſents; eſpecially with thoſe who have any connexions with the fair ſex. A ſhirt here is full as neceſſary as a piece of gold in England. The ladies at Otaheite, after they had pretty well ſtripped their lovers of ſhirts, found a method of clothing themſelves with their own cloth. It was their cuſtom to go on ſhore every morning, and to return on board in the evening, generally clad in rags. This furniſhed a pretence to impor[illegible] the lover for better cloaths; and when he had no more of his own, he was to dreſs them in new cloth of the country, which they always left aſhore; and appearing again in rags, they muſt again be clothed. So that the ſame ſuit might paſs through twenty different hands, and be as often ſold, bought, and given away.

Before I finiſh this account of theſe iſlands, it is neceſſary to mention all I know concerning the government of Ulietea and Otaha. Oreo, ſo often mentioned, is a native of Bola-bola; but is poſſeſſed of *Whenooas* or lands at Ulietea; which, I ſuppoſe, he, as well as many of his countrymen, got at the